Mary Anne A Ven...

A GRAMMAR OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE,

WITH

PRACTICAL EXERCISES,

BY

N. WANOSTROCHT,

Master of the Academy, Alfred-House, Camberwell, and Author of several Books relative to the Education of Youth.

THE FOURTH EDITION:

WITH CONSIDERABLE ADDITIONS AND IMPROVEMENTS

BY THE AUTHOR.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. JOHNSON, N° 72, ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD; AND J. BOOSEY, N° 39, KING-STREET, CHEAPSIDE.

M.DCC.XCII.

TO THE

Honourable Mr. BATHURST.

SIR,

ON my arrival in England, I conſidered it as a fortunate circumſtance, to be firſt introduced to the honour of being appointed your French maſter. I now feel myſelf peculiarly happy, in having this opportunity of making my acknowledgement known to your illuſtrious family, for the civilities I received, when I was but little known in this country.

From that time, it has been my ambition to render the PRACTICAL GRAMMAR, which now ſolicits your patronage, in ſome degree, worthy

of your acceptance. Conſcious, as I am, of its many imperfections, and that it ſtands in need of much indulgence, yet, if it ſhould be found of real utility to the public, your approbation will be no ſmall recommendation; at leaſt, it will ſhew the world, how ready you are to encourage even the faineſt endeavours in uſeful learning.

I am, with the greateſt reſpect, Sir,

Your much obliged,

and moſt obedient,

humble ſervant,

NICOLAS WANOSTROCHT.

PRE-

PREFACE.

THAT "a great book is a great evil" is generally a great truth, for the diſcovery of which we moderns muſt hold ourſelves indebted to the ſages of antiquity. In the following ſheets, I have endeavoured to improve upon the ancient maxim, and to bring the two ends of the book as near together as I poſſibly could. On this frugal plan, the preface might have been ſpared, but cuſtom muſt be complied with; ſome part of our time muſt be ſpent on ſuperfluities, and what is rendered venerable by age muſt not too haſtily be rejected. To enter abruptly upon the main ſubject is generally conſidered as a breach of politeneſs. What is uſeful muſt ſometimes give place to what is convenient; and what rigorous juſtice cannot defend may yet enjoy the ſecurity of preſcription. In compliance, therefore, with univerſal cuſtom, with the general practice of the an-

cients, and, what is ſtill more forcible, the urgent ſolicitation of the bookſeller, I proceed to lay before the reader the general plan of the work.

The idea of the PRACTICAL GRAMMAR was firſt ſuggeſted to the author in the courſe of his private teaching. He found daily the inconvenience of referring from book to book, and determined to ſupply the defect in the beſt manner he could. Whatever was neceſſary to furniſh a tolerable acquaintance with the elements of the language, and to point out the nature of its conſtruction, he propoſed to admit: and to reject every thing that was not eſſentially connected with his principal deſign. His firſt object was to compriſe, in as little room as poſſible, every thing that was really uſeful in the *grammar*, the *exerciſe-book*, and the *book of dialogues*. To this plan he has ſtrictly adhered in the compoſition, and has brought the whole together in a much ſmaller compaſs than, at firſt, could reaſonably have been expected.

The ſeveral parts of ſpeech are arranged in the uſual order, and each part is diſcuſſed under a ſeparate ſection.

Each

Each rule is followed by a familiar exerciſe, which the maſter may uſe in the place of a dialogue.

The advantages, reſulting from the ſcholars learning and then repeating their own tranſlations by heart, muſt, in the opinion of impartial and diſintereſted minds, materially tend to their improvement; by theſe means, the pupils, uniting practice to theory, not only become imperceptibly acquainted with the French phraſeology, which in many inſtances, differs ſo much from the Engliſh conſtruction, but immediately know what is the Engliſh word that correſponds with the French, and *vice verſâ*, which cannot abſolutely be done in a dialogue where the French is ready made for them. Therefore, in order the more fully to anſwer the author's intention, he has, inſtead of fine ſentences extracted from the moſt elegant writers, and often above the comprehenſion of young people, preferred and made uſe of, throughout all the exerciſes, plain and eaſy ſentences, which, at the ſame time they are within reach of the young learner's faculties, will ſoon enable them to ſpeak the French language with propriety

propriety and elegance. What more can be expected from an elementary book?

At the close of every section, a recapitulatory exercise is given upon all the preceding rules.

When there is any difference in the order of arrangement, the French construction is pointed out by small figures, placed against the top of the words in the English sentence.

Some of the most remarkable French idioms are noticed, and exemplified by various instances. Many others might have been adduced, perhaps to very little profit. The idiomatical expressions are daily giving way to a regular syntactical form, and growing into disuse with the best masters.

Rules for pronunciation are totally omitted. From all the attemps that have hitherto been made, it does not appear that any adequate idea of it can be conveyed in writing. The ear cannot be properly formed without the assistance of a good speaker.

Throughout the whole composition, the chief aim has been to unite ease and simplicity with accuracy

accuracy and preciſion. That he has not ſometimes ſaid too little where more was required, and ſometimes too much where leſs would have been ſufficient, he does not take upon him to aſſert. That he has ſometimes failed through negligence, and many times through ignorance, he has alſo great reaſon to fear. His daily avocations left him but little time for ſtudy, and his want of a better acquaintance with the Engliſh language may have ſubjected him to many inaccuracies in his ſtyle, and ſometimes, perhaps, to palpable improprieties.

The author chearfully embraces this opportunity of making his moſt grateful acknowledgements to the public for the favourable reception given to the former editions of this grammar, and, in general, to all his other works: while he is perfectly ſenſible of the obligation, he is alſo ſenſible that much indulgence was required to juſtify the favours he has already received either as a PRIVATE TEACHER or as an AUTHOR. That genenerous indulgence he again ſolicits for their acceptance of this new edition, and begs to aſſure them, that, in every ſituation of life, it will be his conſtant care, as well as his higheſt ambition, to deſerve the

the flattering encouragement he has met with in this country, and never forget the obligations already conferred.

In this edition, the errors in the former publications are carefully corrected, the ſeveral expreſſions, which did not ſo well pleaſe in the courſe of practice, have been altered, and every improvement added which could tend to facilitate the attainment of the French language. It having been ſuggeſted, by ſome gentlemen, to whoſe judgement the author pays the greateſt deference, that the irregular verbs being arranged in alphabetical order, in the body of the book, would be a conſiderable improvement to the work, and facilitate the progreſs of the ſcholar, this is done in the preſent edition. The primitives of the irregular verbs are conjugated at length, and, at the end of each, are given its ſeveral compounds, with large exerciſes both upon the primitives and compounds.

CAMBERWELL,
October 1, 1792.

AN

AN EXPLANATION OF THE ABBREVIATIONS MADE USE OF IN THE FOLLOWING WORK.

m.	Noun maſculine.
f.	Noun feminine.
pl.	Plural.
adj.	Noun adjective.
pro.	Pronoun.
v.	Verb.
p. act.	Participle active.
p. p.	Participle paſſive.
adv.	Adverb.
p.	Preposition.
c.	Conjunction.
int.	Interjection.
☞	The Engliſh word, that has this mark underneath, is not to be expreſſed in French.

The figures, ¹, ², ³, &c. direct to the conſtruction of the words in the French ſentence.

A

PRACTICAL FRENCH GRAMMAR.

SECT. I.

GRAMMAR is the art of ſpeaking and writing in any language with propriety; or, it is the art of rightly expreſſing our thoughts by words.

Grammar is of two kinds, general and particular. Univerſal grammar conſiders language in itſelf, explains the principles which are alike common to every tongue, and diſtinguiſhes, with preciſion, between thoſe particulars which are eſſential and thoſe which are only accidental. Particular grammar applies theſe common principles to a particular language, and furniſhes certain rules and obſervations which are, either mediately or immediately, deducible from its common principles.

A grammar of the French tongue muſt be formed agreeably to the eſtabliſhed uſage, and thoſe particular modes of expreſſion to which cuſtom has given its ſanction. It has therefore for its object, in common with all other grammars, the conſideration of letters, ſyllables, words, and ſentences.

In the FRENCH ALPHABET there are twenty-five letters, viz. a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, x, y, z. Six of theſe are vowels; ſo called becauſe each can be diſtinctly ſounded without the aſſiſtance of any other letter, namely, a, e, i, o, u,

u, and y. The reſt are called CONSONANTS, becauſe they cannot be perfectly ſounded without being aſſociated with ſome vowel, either before or after them.

A SYLLABLE, whether compoſed of one or more letters, requires, in the pronunciation, no more than a ſingle impulſe of the voice: ex. *ba*, *me*, *moi*, &c.

A WORD may conſiſt of one ſyllable, or of many compacted into one meaning; for, a word is the ſmalleſt part of ſpeech which is in itſelf ſignificant, ex. *mon*, my; *livre*, book, &c.

A SENTENCE, or PHRASE, is an aſſemblage of words arranged in their proper order, forming a ſenſe either more or leſs complete, ex.

Je ſuis votre ami,	I am your friend.
J'écrivis hier à votre tante,	I yeſterday wrote to your aunt.

A PERIOD may conſiſt of two or three ſentences joined together, ſo that they depend on one another to form a complete ſenſe. Each of the ſentences forming part of a period is called member of the period, ex.

Les grands hommes ſont rares; on doit les reſpecter, et l'on devroit toujours travailler à ſe rendre ſemblable à eux.	Great men are ſcarce; we ought to reſpect them, and be conſtantly endeavouring to reſemble them.

A DISCOURSE, or SPEECH, is an aſſemblage of ſentences (or phraſes) and periods, joined together and arranged according to the rules of the language.

KINDS OF WORDS.

There are, in the French tongue, nine different ſorts of words, which are generally called the nine parts of ſpeech, viz.

1. L'ARTICLE, THE ARTICLE.
2. LE NOM, THE NOUN.

3. Le Pronom,	the Pronoun.
4. Le Verbe,	the Verb.
5. Le Participe,	the Participle.
6. L'Adverbe,	the Adverb.
7. La Preposition,	the Preposition.
8. La Conjonction,	the Conjunction.
9. L'Interjection,	the Interjection.

Five of them are declinable, that is to say, the radical part of the word remaining the same, the other parts, but especially the termination, will admit of several variations. These declinable words are, the article, noun, pronoun, verb, and participle.

The four last, as they never vary their terminations, are therefore called indeclinable.

GENERAL EXPLANATION.

The articles are certain little words, which, joined to nouns, determine the extent of their signification, and which, in French, denote their gender, number, and case, corresponding to the English words the, of the, from the, and to the, These, in French, are

Le, la, les,	The.
De, du, de la, des,	Of or from the.
A, au, à la, aux,	To the.

The noun, in general, is a word which is used to name or qualify every thing that is the object of discourse: ex.

Papier,	Paper.
Plume,	Pen.
Pain,	Bread.
Bon,	Good.
Petit,	Little.
Mauvais,	Bad, &c.

The pronoun is a word commonly substituted in the place of the noun, to avoid its too frequent repetition, ex.

J'ai vu M. votre pere et lui ai parlé. I saw your father and spoke *to him.*

In this instance, the word *lui*, to him, is put to avoid the repetition of the word *pere*, father.

The VERB is a word which either expresses the state of the subject, or an action done by the subject, or the action received or suffered by the subject, ex.

Mon frére est *malade*, My brother *is* ill.
Ma sœur écrit *une lettre*, My sister *writes* a letter.
Votre cousine est *punie*, Your cousin *is punished.*

The verb is varied by moods, tenses, persons, and numbers.

The PARTICIPLE partakes both of the nature of the verb and the adjective noun: ex.

Ayant, Having.
Donnant, Giving.
Aimé, Loved.
Puni, Punished, &c.

The ADVERB is sometimes joined to the noun, but more frequently to the verb, whence it derives its name. The use of the adverb is, to determine the signification of the noun or verb; or to express some particular modification or circumstance of the action or quality: ex.

Je vous aime sincerement, I love you *sincerely.*
Venez demain, Come *to-morrow.*

In these instances, the words *sincerely* and *to-morrow* are adverbs.

The PREPOSITION is a word which is put before the noun or pronoun, and it always governs the word before which it is placed: ex.

Chez mon ami, At my friend's house.
Devant moi, Before me, &c.

The CONJUNCTION serves to connect the several parts of a discourse: ex. *et*, and; *car*, for; *mais*, but, &c.

The INTERJECTION is a word which expresses the different affections or passions of the soul: ex.

Hélas, mon Dieu! Oh, my God! &c.

A more particular delineation of these nine parts of speech, and their use, in the composition of a sentence, or period, will be the subject of the following sections.

SECT. II.

Of NOUNS.

NOUNS are divided into substantives and adjectives. A NOUN SUBSTANTIVE expresses a thing subsisting by itself, and can make a complete sense independent of any other word: ex. *Dieu*, God; *roi*, king; *maison*, house, &c.

A NOUN SUBSTANTIVE is either common, collective, or proper.

A COMMON NOUN is applicable to all beings or things of the same kind; ex. *homme*, man; *roi*, king; *ville*, town; *table*, table, &c.

A COLLECTIVE NOUN is expressive of many particulars, yet, as these particulars are all united in the mind, and comprehended under one general idea, they may therefore be conceived as one individual, and, without any impropriety, expressed in the singular number: ex. *peuple*, people; *forêt*, forest; *armée*, army, &c.

A PROPER NOUN is applicable to one person or thing only: ex. *Pierre*, Peter; *Londres*, London, &c.

N. B. A noun is always a substantive when we cannot, with propriety, add to it the word *personne*, person, or the word *chose*, thing.

A NOUN ADJECTIVE is used to express the quality, colour, form, or quantity, of the substantive to which it belongs, and is so called because its meaning cannot be ascertained without being joined to its proper substantive, with which it must also agree in gender, number, and case: ex. *bon*, good; *aimable*, lovely; *rouge*, red; *jaune*, yellow; *rond*, round; *quarré*, square; *un*, one; *deux*, two; *trois*, three, &c.

N. B. The noun is always adjective when one can add to it the word *perſonne* or *choſe*, perſon or thing.

In NOUNS four things muſt be conſidered, viz.

Les Articles,	the Articles.
Les Genres,	the Genders.
Les Nombres,	the Numbers.
Les Cas,	the Caſes.

ARTICLES.

There are three ſorts of Articles, viz.

L'Article défini,	the Article definite.
L'Article partitif,	the Article partitive.
L'Article indéfini,	the Article indefinite.

The article muſt always agree with the noun in gender and number.

The DEFINITE ARTICLE is ſo called becauſe it means the whole of the object to which it is applied.

SINGULAR.

Le, for the maſculine, before nouns beginning with a conſonant, or h aſpirated: ex. *le roi*, the king, &c.

La, for the feminine: ex. *la reine*, the queen, &c.

L', with an eliſion, for both genders, before nouns ſingular beginning with a vowel or h not aſpirated: ex. *l'enfant*, the child, &c.

PLURAL.

Les, for both genders, whether the noun begin with a conſonant or a vowel: ex. *les rois*, the kings; les *reines*, the queens; *les enfans*, the children, &c.

The PARTITIVE ARTICLE means only a part of the object, the Engliſh word SOME being always expreſſed or implied.

SINGULAR.

Du for the maſ.
De la for the fem.

Theſe two articles are uſed before nouns beginning with a conſonant or h aſpirate: ex. *du pain*, ſome bread; *de la viande*, ſome meat.

De

De l', for both genders, beginning with a vowel or an h not aspirated: ex. *de l'encre*, some ink.

PLURAL.

Des for both genders: ex. *des amis*, some friends.

The INDEFINITE ARTICLE is *de* or *d'*, of, from, and *à*, to.

This article is used, without distinction, before nouns masculine and feminine in both numbers. Proper names, and the greatest part of the pronouns, are declined with it.

Some grammarians admit of a fourth article, viz. *un* for the masculine, and *une* for the feminine, In English a or an: but it may be observed, that it is always declined with the indefinite article, and therefore takes the nature of a noun adjective.

GENDERS AND NUMBERS.

There are two GENDERS, viz. the masculine and the feminine. A noun is masculine when there is before it *le* or *un*, as *le* or *un livre*, the or a book. A noun is feminine when it is preceded by *la* or *une*, as *la* or *une plume*, the or a pen.

There are two NUMBERS, the singular and plural. The singular number speaks of one thing only, as, *une table*, a table. The plural speaks of more than one, as, *des tables*, tables. There are some nouns that are never used but in the singular number, as:

1. The names of metals: ex. *or*, gold; *argent*, silver; *cuivre*, brass; *plomb*, lead, &c.
2. The names of virtues and vices: ex. *avarice*, avarice; *charité*, charity; *foi*, faith; *haine*, hatred; *orgueil*, pride; *prodigalité*, prodigality, &c.
3. The names by which the five senses are denoted: ex. *la vue*, the sight; *le goût*, the taste; *l'odorat*, smelling; *le toucher*, feeling; *l'ouie*, hearing.
4. Proper names, except when they are used metaphorically.
5. To the foregoing may be added the following, which are not reducible to any general rules;

Artillerie,

Artillerie,	artillery.	*Faim,*	hunger.
Attirail,	implements.	*Fumée,*	ſmoke.
Bonheur,	happineſs.	*Fuite,*	flight.
Colere,	anger.	*Gloire,*	glory.
Courroux,	wrath.	*Honte,*	ſhame.
Enfance,	infancy.	*Jeuneſſe,*	youth.
Lait,	milk.	*Salut,*	ſafety.
Miel,	honey.	*Soif,*	thirſt.
Nobleſſe,	nobility.	*Sommeil,*	ſleep.
Pauvreté,	poverty.	*Vieilleſſe,*	old age.
Sang,	blood.		

There are others which are never uſed but in the plural number only; ſuch as

Ancêtres,	anceſtors.	*Funerailles,*	funerals.
Ayeux,	foreſather.	*Frais,*	expences.
Attours,	apparel.	*Hardes,*	clothes.
Ciſeaux	ſciſſors.	*Limites,*	limits.
Confitures,	ſweet-meats.	*Mœurs,*	manners.
Délices,	delight.	*Mouchettes,*	ſnuffers.
Dépens,	coſt.	*Ténebres,*	darkneſs.
Entrailles,	entrails,	*Vivres,*	victuals.
Epouſailles,	eſpouſals.		

In general the plural number is formed by adding an *s* to the ſingular: ex.

Le pere, the father; *les peres,* the fathers, &c.

All nouns, having their ſingular ending in *s*, *x*, or *z*, admit of no variation in the plural: ex.

Le fils, the ſon; *les fils,* the ſons.
Une noix, a walnut; *des noix,* walnuts.
Le nez, the noſe; *les nez,* noſes.

EXCEPTIONS.

Nouns ending in *au*, *eau*, *eu*, *oeu*, *ieu*, or *ou*, form their plural by *x* inſtead of *s*: ex.

Un chapeau, a hat; *des chapeaux,* hats.
Un manteau, a cloak; *des manteaux,* cloaks.
Un lieu, a place; *des lieux,* places.
Un chou, a cabbage; *des choux,* cabbages.

The

The following differ from this rule, and their plural terminates in *s*.

Matou, a great cat;	*matous*, great cats.
Trou, a hole;	*trous*, holes.

Nouns ending in *al* and *ail* have their plural in *aux*: ex.

Animal, a living creature;	*animaux*, living creatures.
Cheval, a horse;	*chevaux*, horses.
Travail, work;	*travaux*, works.

These only are excepted:

Bal, a ball,	*Eventail*, a fan,
Gouvernail, the helm,	*Sérail*, a seraglio,
Détail, account, retail,	*Portail*, gateway.

Which form their plural in *s*.

The following are not conformable to any established rule.

Ayeul, a grandfather;	*ayeux*, grandfathers.
Ciel, heaven;	*cieux*, heavens.
Oeil, the eye;	*yeux*, eyes.
Loi, law;	*loix*, laws.
Except *des ciels de lit*,* testers of a bed.	
des œils de bœuf, ovals.	

CASES.

There are six cases: *viz.*

1. *Le Nominatif*,	the Nominative.
2. *Le Génitif*,	the Genitive.
3. *Le Datif*,	the Dative.
4. *L'Accusatif*,	the Accusative.
5. *Le Vocatif*,	the Vocative.
6. *L'Ablatif*,	the Ablative.

The NOMINATIVE and ACCUSATIVE cases have exactly the same form, and are always declined with the same article; the only difference between them arises from their different positions in the sentence.

* This term becomes obsolete: it is better to say, *un fond de lit*.

In

In the natural conſtruction, the nominative always precedes the verb and the accuſative follows it. The nominative is the *ſubject* of the ſentence, and the accuſative is the *object* to which it refers: ex.

Le roi aime le peuple, the king loves the people.

In order to know the nominative from the accuſative, I aſk, Who loves the people? THE KING (which is the anſwer) is the ſubject, and conſequently the nominative. Whom or what does the king love? the anſwer is, THE PEOPLE, which is the object, and therefore the accuſative.

The GENITIVE and ABLATIVE are declined with the ſame article, but the firſt is always preceded by another word on which it depends: as,

La porte de la chambre, the chamber door, that is, the door of the chamber.

La maiſon de mon pere, my father's houſe, &c.

Or it is governed by a prepoſition, as,

Près du feu, near the fire, &c.

The laſt is always put after nouns or verbs expreſſing diviſion, partition, or ſeparation; and after ſome prepoſitions. The genitive is known by the articles *de*, *du*, *de la*, *des*, of or of the. Sometimes the article is not expreſſed in Engliſh, as may be ſeen in the ſentences before-mentioned. The ablative is known by the articles *de*, *du*, *de la*, *des*, from or from the.

The DATIVE ſhews to whom the thing ſpoken of is given, or to what it is attributed; as,

Donnez cette pomme à mon frere, give that apple to my brother.

This caſe is known by the articles *à*, *au*, *à la*, *aux*, to or to the.

The VOCATIVE is uſed only for calling, or naming, the perſon to whom the ſpeech is addreſſed: as,

Ami, qui êtes vous? Friend, who are you?

DECLENSIONS OF NOUNS.

All changes in nouns are formed by numbers and caſes. To decline a noun, therefore, is to expreſs its ſeveral

ſeveral variations; and, under theſe variations, to point out its different ſignifications.

Some ſhort examples are added to the nouns, that learners may the more eaſily underſtand what has been ſaid reſpecting the caſes.

Declenſion of the article definite, Le, *(the,) before Nouns maſculine beginning with a Conſonant.*

SINGULAR.

Nom. *LE prince,*	the prince
Le prince eſt généreux,	the prince is generous.
Gen. *DU prince*	of the prince.
Les vertus du prince,	the virtues of the prince.
Dat. *AU prince,*	to the prince
Parler au prince,	to ſpeak to the prince.
Acc. *LE prince,*	the prince.
Aimer le prince,	to love the prince.
Voc. *O prince,*	O prince.
Abl *DU prince,*	from the prince.
Recevoir des lettres du prince,	to receive letters from the prince.

Declenſion of the Article definite, La, *(the,) before Nouns feminine beginning with a Conſonant.*

SINGULAR.

Nom. *LA princeſſe,*	the princeſs.
La princeſſe eſt aimable,	the princeſs is amiable.
Gen. *DE LA princeſſe,*	of the princeſs
Les regards de la princeſſe,	the looks of the princeſs.
Dat. *A LA princeſſe,*	to the princeſs.
Donner à la princeſſe,	to give to the princeſs.
Acc. *LA princeſſe,*	the princeſs
Imitez la princeſſe,	imitate the princeſs.
Voc. *O princeſſe,*	O princeſs.
Abl *DE LA princeſſe,*	from the princeſs.
Etre ſeparé de la princeſſe,	to be ſeparated from the princeſs.

Declenſion

Declenſion of the Article definite, L', *(the,) for both Genders, before Nouns beginning with a Vowel or an h not aſpirate.*

SINGULAR.

Nom. *L'enfant,*	the child.
L'enfant eſt timide,	the child is fearful.
Gen. *De l'enfant,*	of the child.
Le tempérament de l'enfant.	the child's temper, or, the temper of the child.
Dat. *A L'enfant,*	to the child.
Attribuer à l'enfant,	to attribute to the child.
Acc. *L'enfant,*	the child.
Admirer l'enfant,	to admire the child.
Voc. *O enfant,*	O child.
Abl. *DE l'enfant,*	from the child.
S'éloigner de l'enfant,	to go away from the child.

The plurals of theſe nouns, whether they begin with a conſonant or a vowel, are declined, in both genders, by the article *les* (the).

PLURAL.

Nom. *LES rois,*	the kings.
Les rois commandent,	the kings command.
Gen. *DES rois,*	of the kings.
L'ordre des rois,	the order of the kings.
Dat. *AUX rois,*	to the kings.
Envoyer aux rois,	to ſend to the kings.
Acc. *LES rois,*	the kings.
Reſpectez les rois,	honour the kings.
Voc. *O rois,*	O kings.
Abl. *DES rois,*	from the kings.
Etre loin des rois,	to be far from the kings.

The *definite article* muſt be placed, in French, before all nouns uſed in a *general ſenſe,* or denoting a whole ſpecies of objects, though the Engliſh admit of no article in this caſe: ex.

L'homme eſt mortel,	man is mortal.
LE Danemarck, LA Suede, et L'Angleterre, ſont les trois royaumes du nord,	Denmark, Sweden, and England, are the three northern kingdoms.

Aimer

Aimer LES pommes et LES poires,	to love apples and pears.
Haïr LA pareſſe,	to hate idleneſs.
LA vertu et LA beauté ſont eſtimables,	virtue and beauty are eſtimable.
L'or eſt préférable à L'argent	gold is preferable to ſilver.

This article is alſo placed before nouns uſed in a *ſpecific ſenſe*, or denoting a particular object, in which caſe the article is likewiſe expreſſed in Engliſh, ex.

L'homme que vous m'avez recommandé eſt fort habile,	the man whom you recommended me is very ſkilful.
LES pommes & LES poires de votre jardin ſont excellentes,	The apples and pears of your garden are excellent.
LA beauté et LA vertu de votre ſœur la font admirer,	The beauty and virtue of your ſiſter cauſe her to be admired.
L'or de l'Amérique eſt préférable à celui de l'Europe,	The gold of America is preferable to that of Europe.

This article being declinable in French, and conſequently admitting of different variations, ought to be repeated before all the *ſubſtantives* of a ſentence, and before *nouns* adjective uſed as ſubſtantives, and agree with them in *gender* and *number*; ex.

LE ſel, LA moutarde, et L'huile, ſont ſur LE ſtables,	The ſalt, muſtard, and oil, are on the tables.
LE blanc, LE rouge, et LE noir, ſont trois différentes couleurs,	Red, white, and black, are three different colours.

On the contrary, this article, though expreſſed in Engliſh, muſt be omitted in French, before a noun immediately followed by a name denoting a degree of conſanguinity or kindred, or the name of a particular place to which it belongs: ex.

Alexandre fils de Philippe,	Alexander *the* ſon of Philip.
Robert frere de Richard,	Robert *the* brother of Richard.
Mon ami demeure à Londres, ville capitale d'Angleterre,	My friend lives in London, *the* capital city of England.

EXERCISES UPON THE FOREGOING RULES.

Where is the maſter of the houſe? —— Virtue
Où, adv. *eſt*, v. *maître*, m. *maiſon*, f. *Vertu*, f.
is eſtimable. —— The prince ſpoke to the king.
eſt, v. *eſtimable*, adj. *prince*, m. *parla*, v. *roi*, m.

Do you[2] prefer[1] England[2] to[4] France[5]? —
vous, pro. *préferez*, v. *Angleterre*, f. *France*, f.

To the third page of the book. —— Prefer virtue
troiſieme, adj. *page* f. *livre*, m. *Préférez*, v.
to riches, friendſhip to money, and utility to pleaſure.
richeſſes, pl. f. *amitié*, f. *argent*, m. *et*, c. *utilité*, f. *plaiſir*, m.

The father mother, and children, are dead.
pere, m. *mere*, f. *enfant*, m. *ſont*, v. *mort*, p. p.

The[1] lazy[2] do [3]not[5] love[4] work[6]. ——
pareſſeux, adj. *ne-pas*, adv. *aiment*, v. *ouvrage*, m.

Corn grows for men and graſs for
Bled, m. *croit*, v. *pour* p. *homme*, m. *herbe*, f.
cattle. —— Juſtice is the miſtreſs and queen of
bétail, m. *Juſtice*, f. *eſt*, v. *maîtreſſe*, f. *reine*, f.
virtue. — Walk in the garden. —
Promenez-vous, v. *dans*, p. *jardin*, m.

Send the child to ſchool. —— Give that
Envoyez, v. *enfant*, m. *école*, f. *Donnez*, v. *cela*, pro.
to the poor. —— Children[1] generally[3] like[2]
pauvre, m. *ordinairement*, adv. *aiment*, v.
apples[4] and[5] pears[6]. —— Education is to the mind
pomme, f. *poire*, f. *Education*, f. *eſt*, v. *eſprit*, m.
what cleanlineſs is to the body. — I like
ce que, pro. *propreté* f. *corps*, m. *Je*, pro. *aime*, v.
yellow

yellow and grey.—Peace and plenty make
jaune, m. *gris*, m. *Paix*, f. *abondance*, f. *rendent*, v.

men happy.——The life of man is ſhort——The
heureux, adj. *vie*, f. *courte*, adj.

enemies were on the mountain.—Love wiſ-
ennemi, m. *étoient*, v. *ſur*, p. *montagne*, f. *Aimez*, v. *ſa-*

dom. Do not[3] neglect[2] ſtudy[1].——Avoid leiſure.
geſſe, f. *négligez*, v. *étude*, f. *Evitez*, v. *loiſir*, m.

You admire the beauty of the ladies.
Vous, pro. *admirez*, v. *beauté*, f. *dame*, f.

To the thickneſs of the walls.—— Honour is the
épaiſſeur, f. *muraille*, f. *Honneur*, m.

reward of virtue.—She comes from church.
recompenſe, f. *Elle*, pro. *vient*, v. *égliſe*, f.

We go to the park.—Corn, wheat, and
Nous, pro. *allons*, v. *parc*, m. *froment*, m.

barley, are dear.—I hate milk, butter, and
orge, f. *ſont*, v. *cher*, adj. *hais*, v. *lait*, m. *beurre*, m.

cheeſe.——We ſpeak of America and not of
fromage, m. *parlons*, v. *Amérique*, f. *non pas*, adv.

Poland.—— It is the will of the emperor.
Pologne, f. *C'eſt*, v. *volonté*, v. *empéreur*, m.

Bring the knives and forks.——Honour is
Apportez, v. *couteau*, m. *fourchette*, f.

due to kings.—The fate of nations is governed
dû, p. p. *ſort*, m. *nation*, f. *gouverné*, p. p.

by Providence.—You play with the boys.
par, p. *Providence*, f. *jouez*, v. *avec*, p. *garçon*, m.

Revenge is the pleaſure of a weak[2] mind[1].
Vengeance, f. *plaiſir*, m. *de un foible*, adj. *eſprit*, m.

Patience and perſeverance are neceſſary.—— Italy
Patience, f. *perſévérance*, f. *néceſſaire*, adj. *Italie*, f.

is the garden of Europe.—— The Jupiter of the
jardin, m. *Europe*, f.

 heathens

heathens was the ſon of Saturn, and the
payen, m. *étoit*, v. *fils*, m.

father of the gods.——The deſire of glory,
pere, m. *dieu*, m. *deſir*, m. *gloire*, f.

riches, power, and pleaſure, is a diſeaſe of the
pouvoir, m. *une maladie*, f.

mind.——Tranquillity of ſoul is the height of
ame, f. *Tranquillité*, f. *ame*, f. *comble*, m.

felicity.—Grant us peace.—Have you
felicité, f. *Accordez*, v. *nous*, pro. *paix*, f. *Avez-vous*, v.

paſſed through Spain, Portugal, or Hol-
paſſé, p.p. *par*, p. *Eſpagne*, f. *Portugal*, m. *ou*, c. *Hol-*

land?——The moſt noble of virtues is charity.
lande, f. *plus*, adv. *noble*, adj. *charité*, f.

Carry the grammar to the boys, and the dic-
Portez, v. *grammaire*, f. *dic-*

tionary to the girls—They come from the
tionnaire, m. *fille*, f. *Ils*, pro. *viennent*, v.

Indies.—Prefer always virtue, prudence,
Inde, f. *Préférez*, v. *toujours*, adv. *prudence*, f.

and good ſenſe, to beauty.—Put the wine,
bon, adj. *ſens*, m. *Mettez*, v. *vin*, m.

beer, and cider, on the table.——Give
bierre, f. *cidre*, m. *ſur*, p. *table*, f. *Donnez*, v.

me the loaf.——My ſiſter lives
moi, pro. *pain*, m. *Ma*, pro. *ſœur*, f. *demeure*, v.

at York, the capital city of the county of the
à, p, *comté*, m.

ſame name.——(It is ſaid) that America,
même, adj. *nom*, m. *On dit* *que*

France, and Spain, have made peace with Eng-
ont, v. *fuit*, p.p.

land.

When

When, in Engliſh, two or more ſubſtantives, ſignifying different things, come together in a ſentence, having a dependence on each other, and having no ſtop between them, the laſt (in Engliſh) muſt be placed at the beginning of the ſentence (in French) and the others after it, with the *genitive* of this article before them, according to their gender and number: as,

Le[1] *fils*[2] du[3] *roi*[4],	the[1] king's[4] ſon[2].
La[1] *couronne*[2] de[3] la *reine*[4],	the[1] queen's[4] crown[2].
La[1] *femme*[2] du[3] *fils*[4] du[5] *chancellier*[6],	the[1] chancellor's[6] ſon's[4] wife[2].

That is, the ſon of the king; the crown of the queen; the wife of the ſon of the chancellor.

If the ſecond ſubſtantive in French (which is the firſt in Engliſh) ſerve to denote ſome particular COMMODITY, USE, QUALITY, or LIQUOR, then it muſt be put in the *dative*: as,

Le[1] *pot*[2] au *lait*,[3]	the[1] milk[3]-pot[2].
La[1] *bouteille*[2] à *l'huile*[3],	the[1] oil[3]-bottle[2].
La[1] *femme*[2] aux *pommes*[3],	the[1] apple[3]-woman[2].

After the adverb *bien*, when placed before a ſubſtantive and ſignifying *much*, *a great deal*, *many*, the *genitive* of this article muſt always be uſed: as,

Bien du *mérite*,	much merit.
Bien de l'*argent*,	a great deal of money.
Bien des *dames*,	many ladies.
Bien des *livres*,	many books.

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING RULES.

I have ſeen the king's apartments and the
Je, pro. *ai*, v. *vu*, p.p. *appartement*, m.
queen's picture.——The children make much
reine, f. *portrait*, m. *font*, v. *bien*, adv.
noiſe.——Bring me the wine bottle.——The
bruit, m. *Appertez*, v. *moi*, pro. *vin*, m. *bouteille*, f.

man's

man's ſtrength is very great.——He has
force, f. *eſt*, v. *bien*, adv. *grande*, adj. *Il*, pro. *a*, v.
many friends.—Where is the fiſh market?
bien, adv. *amis*, m. *Où*, adv. *poiſſon*, m. *marché*, m.
They[4] give[3] you[2] much[4] trouble[5].—(There is)
Ils, pro. *donnent*, v. *vous*, pro. *peine*, f. *Voilà*
the oiſter woman.—Where is your wine
huître, f. *femme*, f. *votre*, pro. *vin*, m.
cellar?——Lend me the maid's
cave, f. *Prêtez*, v. *moi*, pro. *ſervante*, f.
cloak.——Give me the ink bottle.——This man
mantelet, m. *Donnez*, v. *encre*, f. *Cet*, pro.
has (a great deal) of money.——Tell (to) the
bien, adv. *Dites*, v.
butter man to come here.——We live
beurre, m. *de venir*, v. *ici*, adv. *Nous*, pro. *demeurons*, v.
in the poultry-market.
dans, p. *volaille*, f.

Declension of the Article Partitive.

Singular.

Maſculine.

Nom. Acc. *du pain*, ſome bread.*
Gen. Abl. *de pain*, of or from ſome bread.
Dat. *à du pain*, to ſome bread.

Feminine.

Nom. Acc. *de la viande*, ſome meat.
Gen. Abl. *de viande*, of or from ſome meat.
Dat. *à de la viande*, to ſome meat.

Maſculine or Feminine.

Nom. Acc. *de l'argent*, ſome money.

* In aſking a queſtion, the Engliſh generally make uſe of *any*, which, in French, muſt be rendered by this ſame article: ex.

Y a-t-il du *pain ici?*	Is there *any* bread here?
Avez-vous de la *viande?*	Have you *any* meat?
A-t-elle acheté des *livres?*	Has ſhe bought *any* books?

Gen.

Gen. Abl. *d'argent*, of or from ſome money.
Dat. *à de l'argent*, to ſome money.

The plural is the ſame for both genders.

N. A. *des livres*, ſome books, *des auteurs*, ſome authors.
G. A. *de livres*, of or from, &c. *d'auteurs*, of or from, &c.
Dat. *à des livres*, to, &c. *à des auteurs*, to, &c.

N. B. If the ſubſtantive be preceded by an adjective, inſtead of *du*, *de la*, *des*, we muſt uſe *de* or *d'* : as,

SINGULAR.

	Maſc.	Fem.	Maſc. or Fem.
N. A. G. A.	*De mauvais vin*,	*De bonne eau*,	*D'excellent pain.*
	Bad wine.	Good water.	Excellent bread.
D.	*à de mauvais vin*,	*à de bonne eau*,	*à d'excellent pain.*
	To bad wine.	To good water.	To excellent bread.

PLURAL.

N. Ac. G. Ab.	*De bons livres*,	*D'habiles gens.*
	Good books.	Learned people.
Dat.	*à de bons livres.*	*à d'habiles gens.*
	To good books.	To learned people.

This laſt rule is not general; for, there are ſome ſubſtantives, though preceded by an adjective, which require the other article, inſtead of *de*. However, inſtances of this kind are very few; they never happen but when the adjective and ſubſtantive preſent to the mind one idea only: as, *Paris eſt le centre* DU *bon goût*, &c. Paris is the centre of good taſte, &c.

This article muſt be uſed wherever the Engliſh word SOME is either expreſſed or underſtood, and ought to be repeated before every ſubſtantive in a ſentence: as,

Du *pain et* de *l'eau lui ſuffiſent*, — Bread and water are ſufficient for him.
Apportez du *vinaigre*, de la *moutarde*, de l'*huile*, *et* des *fourchettes*, — Bring *ſome* vinegar, muſtard, oil, and forks.

EXERCISES

EXERCISES UPON THIS ARTICLE.

Bread, meat, and water, are things neceſ-
ſont, v. *choſe*, f. *néceſ-*
ſary to man. —— I drink wine and water.
ſaire, adj. *Je*, pro. *bois*, v.

She eats cheeſe.——Bring me ſome
Elle, pro. *mange*, v. *moi*, pro.
muſtard.— Have you bought ſome paper, pens,
mautarde, f. *Avez* v. *acheté*, p. p. *papier*, m. *plume*, f.
and ink?——You[1] always[3] read[2] good[4] books.[5]
encre, f. *toujours*, adv. *liſez*, v.

Send him ſome bread, meat, and potatoes.
Envoyez, v. *lui*, pro. *pomme de terre*, f.

Bad[1] wine[2] is[4] [3]not[5] worth[4] good[6] water[7].
vaut, v.

Do you[2] ſell[1] fruits[3]? —— He ſpeaks to
vendez, v. *fruit*, m. *Il*, pro. *parle*, v.
learned people.—Buy ſome tea and ſugar.
gens, f.* *Achetez*, v. *thé*, m. *ſucre*, m.
heard good news.——Will you
appris, p. p. *bonne*, adj. *nouvelle*, f. *Voulez*, v.
ſome beef with turnips and carrots?
manger, v. *bœuf*, m. *avec*, p. *navet*, m. *carotte*, f.
You have fine fruits.—Do you[2] drink[1] beer[3]?
avez, v. *beaux*, adj. *buvez*, v. *bierre*, f.
(Is there) any wine in the bottle?
(Y a-t-il) *dans*, p. *bouteille*, f.
She has worthy friends.—Bring me good
Elle, pro. *a*, v. *digne*, adj. *ami*, m. *bonne*, adj.
pens.—I[1] have[3] given[4] him[2] bread, money, and
donné, p. p. *lui*, pro.

* *Gens*, preceded by an adjective, is of the feminine gender; but, when the adjective follows, it is put in the maſculine.

clothes.

clothes.—— Lend me ſome books.—— I prefer
habit, m. *préfere*, v.
good water to bad wine. —— She has mo-
Elle, pro. *a*, v. *mo-*
deſty and prudence.—Bring us ſome plates.
deſtie, f. *nous*, pro. *aſſiette*, f.
Will you have ſome milk or cream?——Miſs
ou, c. *crême*, f. *Mademoiſelle*, f.
Sharp has fine eyes.
a, v. *œil*, m.

Declension of the Article Indefinite.

All proper names of perſons, cities, towns, and villages, are declined with this article: ex.

Singular.

Maſculine.

Nom. Acc. *Pierre*, — Peter.
Gen. Abl. *de Pierre*, of or from Peter.
Dat. *à Pierre*, to Peter.

Feminine.

Nom. Acc. *Marie*, Maria.
Gen. Abl. *de Marie*, of or from Maria.
Dat. *à Marie*, to Maria.

This article, before a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* not aſpirated, is expreſſed as follows:

Nom. Acc. *Antoine*, Anthony.
Gen. Abl. *d'Antoine*, of or from Anthony.
Dat. *à Antoine*, to Anthony.

Nom. Acc. *Londres*, London.
Gen. Abl. *de Londres*, of or from London.
Dat. *à Londres*, to London.

N. B It is neceſſary to obſerve, that the dative of this article, TO, uſed after a word ſignifying COMING, GOING,

GOING, RETURNING, OR SENDING TO, placed before the name of a kingdom or province, muſt be rendered in French by the prepoſition EN: ex.

Mon frere eſt allé en *Italie*,	My brother is gone *to* Italy.
Il doit bientôt retourner en *Amérique*,	He is ſoon to go back again *to* America.

EXERCISES UPON THIS ARTICLE.

Here is John's brother.—Speak to Martha.
Voici, adv. *Jean*, m. *frere*, m. *Parlez*, v. *Marthe*, f.

It is Peter's hat.—— She goes to Richmond.
C'eſt, v. *chapeau*, m. *Elle*, pro. *va*, v.

He comes from Paris.—You have Mr.
Il, pro. *vient*, v. *Vous*, pro. *avez*, v. *monſieur*, m.

Richard's ſword. —— When[1] will[2] you[3] go[2]
épée, f. *Quand*, adv. *irez*, v.

to[4] France[5]?—Give me Laura's cap.
Donnez, v. *moi*, pro. *Laure*, f. *bonnet*, m.

I (am going) to Croydon.— I have found
Je, pro. *vais*, v. *ai*, v. *trouvé*, p.p.

Andrew's waiſtcoat. —— She (ſhall come back) to
André, m. *veſte* f. *reviendra*, v.

England (next year). —— Carry that
l'année prochaine. *Portez*, v. *cela*, pro.

to Stephen.
Etienne, m.

The genitive of this article *de* is uſed after nouns and adverbs of *quantity*, whether expreſſed in Engliſh or not: ex.

Deux livres de *ceriſes*,	two pounds of cherries.
Quatre aunes de *mouſſeline*,	four yards of muſlin.
Trop de *vin*,	too much wine.
Moins de *mérite*,	leſs merit.
Plus de *ſageſſe*,	more wiſdom.

After

After the negation *pas* or *point*, no or not; the words *que*, what; *quelque chose*, something; and *rien*, nothing: ex.

Point de *repos*,	no reſt.
Que de *bruit!*	what noiſe!
Que d'*intégrité!*	what integrity!
*Quelque choſe** de *bon*,	ſomething good.
Rien de *mauvais*,	nothing bad.

Before names of countries, kingdoms, and provinces, when preceded by a noun expreſſing a perſonal title, or by a verb ſignifying coming from; ex.

Le roi d'*Angleterre*,	the king *of* England.
Il arrive de *France*,	he arrives *from* France, &c.

EXERCISES ON THESE RULES.

I have bought ſix yards of cloth.
Je, pro. *ai*, v. *acheté*, p.p. *drap*, m.

Bring me three pounds of veal, and two
Apportez, v. *moi*, pro. *trois* *veau*, m. *deux*

pounds of mutton.——She as a great num-
mouton, m. *Elle*, pro. *a*, v. *un grand*, adj. *nom-*

ber of children.—Do [1]not[4] give[3] her[2]
bre, m. *ne-pas* *donnez*, v. *lui*, pro.

(too [5]many) pears[6].—I[1] have[3] [2]no[4] daughters[5].
trop, adv. *ai*, v. *ne point*, *fille*, f.

Did you ſee the duke of Bavaria with the
Avez, v. *vous*, pro. *vu*, v. *duc*, m. *Baviere*, f. *avec*, pro.

archbiſhop of York?—We have (ſo many)
archevêque, m. *Nous*, pro. *avons*, v. *tant*, adv.

grapes.——They have (a little) money.—I
raiſin, m. *Ils*, pro. *ont*, v. *un peu*, adv.

know the king of Pruſſia.—He has more
connois, v. *Pruſſe*, f. *Il*, pro. *a*, v.

* It muſt be obſerved, that the word *choſe*, ſtanding by itſelf, is of the feminine gender; but, being joined to the word *quelque*, it is of the maſculine.

friends

friends than you. —— (There were) (ſo many)
ami, m. *que*, c. *vous*, pro. *Il y avoit*, v.

ladies.—He commanded an army of forty
dame, f. *commandoit*, v. *une*, *armée*, f. *quarante*

thouſand men.——She[1] ſays[3] [2]nothing[4] true.
mille *dit*, v. *ne rien*, adv. *vrai*, adj.

You ſpeak of Alexander, king of Macedonia.
parlez, v. *Alexandre*, m. *Macédoine*, f.

Do you[2] come[1] from[3] Italy?
venez, v. *Italie*, f.

De is likewiſe placed before nouns governed by another ſubſtantive, of which they expreſs the CHARACTER, CAUSE, COUNTRY, MATTER, NATURE, and QUALITY: ex.

Une[1] *maiſon*[2] de *brique*[3], a[1] brick[3] houſe[2].
Du vin[1] de *Bourgogne*[2], Burgundy[2] wine[1], &c.

After the adjectives of number, when they are followed by a participle paſſive: ex.

Quatre de *renvayés*, four ſent away, &c.

EXERCISES ON THESE RULES.

Your[1] ſiſter[2] has[3] a[4] ſilk[6] gown[5] and a gold
Votre, pro. *ſœur*, f. *a*, v. *une ſoie*, f. *robe*, f. *un or*, m.

thimble.—We drink Champagne wine.
dé, m. *Nous*, pro. *buvons*, v. *Champagne*, f.

(It is) a marble pillar.——They have a
C'eſt, v. *marbre*, m. *pillier*, m. *Ils*, pro. *ont*, v. *une*

country houſe.——Edinburgh is the capital
campagne, f. *maiſon*, f. *Edinbourg eſt*, v. *capitale*, adj.

city of the kingdom of Scotland.—Shut[1] the[2]
ville, f. *royaume*, m. *Ecoſſe*, f. *Fermez*, v.

fore[4] door[3].—A lady of wit is a jewel
devant, m. *porte*, f. *Une dame*, f. *eſprit*, m. *eſt*, v. *un joyau*, m.

of worth.——(He is) a man of honour.——She has
prix, m. *C'eſt*, v. *un*

bought

bought silver buckles and diamond
acheté, p.p. *argent*, m. *boucle*, f. *diamant*, m.
ear-rings. —— Have you spoken to the silk-
pendans d'oreille, m. *Avez*, v. *parlé*, p.p. *soie*, f.
merchant. —— Give[1] me[2] the[3] upper[4] crust[5].
marchand, m. *Donnez*, v. *moi*, pro. *dessus*, m. *croûte*, f.
— Sixty loft. —— Bring me my straw
Soixante perdu, p.p. *mon*, pro. *paille*, f.
hat.
chapeau, m.

DE is placed after the adjectives signifying DIMENSION; as, *épais*, thick; *gros*, big, large; *haut*, high, tall; *large*, wide, broad; *long*, long; and *profond*, deep; though there is no article expressed in English; ex.

Une[1] *table*[2] *longue*[3] de *dix*[4] A[1] table[2] ten[4] feet[5] long[3]
pieds[5], *et*[6] *large*[7] de *huit*[8], and[6] eight[8] broad[7].

But there is a more elegant way, which is, to turn the adjective of dimension into the substantive; then the words of measure and those of dimension are preceded by *de*; ex.

Une table de *dix pieds* de *longueur et* de *huit* de *largeur.* A table ten feet long and eight broad.

In this last example, it may be seen that the French and English are parallel with each other; therefore, in the following exercise, the adjective and substantive are put down, that the learner may translate it both ways.

EXERCISES ON THESE RULES.

I have a box four inches thick,
Je, pro. *ai*, v. *une boite*, f. *quatre pouce*, m. *épais—seur*, f.*
ten feet long, and six broad. —I know
dix pied, m. *long—ueur*, f. *six large—ur*, f. *connois*, v.
a man seven feet high. —— (It is) a ditch nine
un sept haut—eur, f. *C'est*, v. *un fossé*, m. *neuf*

* Read, *épais*, adjective, *épaisseur*, substantive; and so of the others.

feet six inches deep, and five feet broad. —
profond—eur, f. *cinq*

(There is) a room fifty paces long and
Voilà *une chambre*, f. *cinquante* *pas*, m.

twenty broad. —— The walls of our garden
vingt *muraille*, f. *notre*, pro.

are thirty feet three inches high, and two
ſont, v. *ont*, v. *trente* *trois* *deux*

broad.

If the learner tranſlate this laſt ſentence by the adjective of dimenſion, he muſt uſe the word *ſont*, which is the proper word for the Engliſh, ARE, and follows the preceding rule; but, if he turn the adjective of dimenſion into its ſubſtantive, the verb *être*, to be, is to be rendered into French by the verb *avoir*, to have, and *de*, before the word of meaſure, is ſuppreſſed. In this laſt caſe, the word *ont* muſt be inſerted inſtead of *ſont*. Example by the adjective:

Notre chambre eſt *longue de vingt pieds et large de douze*;

By the ſubſtantive;

Notre chambre a *vingt pieds de longueur et douze de largeur.* Our room *is* twenty feet long and twelve broad.

When two ſubſtantives are joined together by a hyphen, both making a compound word in Engliſh, the firſt of which denotes the *form* or *uſe* of the ſecond; the latter muſt be placed before the former in French, and followed by the *dative* of this article *à*: ex.

Un moulin[1] *à papier*[2], a paper[2]-mill[1].
Une boite[1] *à poudre*[2], a powder[2]-box[1].

EXERCISES ON THIS RULE.

Gun-powder was invented by a monk.
Canon, m. *poudre*, f. *fut*, v. *inventée*, p. p. *par*, p. *moine*, m.

The

— The ſervant has loſt the tinder-box, and
a, v. *perdu*, p.p. *fuſil*, m.

cannot light the candle.——If you go to
ne ſauroit, v. *allumer*, v. *chandelle*, f. *Si*, c. *allez*, v.

London to-morrow, bring me a toupee-
demain, adv. *apportez*, v. *moi*, pro. *toupet*, m.

iron.——Have you ſeen the water-mill which
fer, m. *Avez*, v. *vu*, p p. *que*, pro.

my father has bought? — No, but I have
mon, pro. *acheté*, p.p. *Non*, adv. *mais*, c. *ai*, v.

ſeen the wind-mill which your brother has built.
vent, m. *fait bâtir*, v.

at Greenwich. — I have found your ſiſter's work-
à, p. *trouvé*, p.p. *ouvrage*, m.

bag in the eating - room.
ſac, m. *dans*, p. *manger*, m. *chambre*, f.

DECLENSION *of* UN, m. UNE, f. A *or* AN.

SINGULAR.

Maſculine.

Nom. Acc. *un livre*, a book.
Gen. Abl. *d'un livre*, of or from a book.
Dat. *à un livre*, to a book.

Feminine.

Nom. Acc. *une plume*, a pen.
Gen. Abl. *d'une plume*, of or from a pen.
Dat. *à une plume*, to a pen.

EXERCISES UPON THIS ARTICLE.

I have a hat and a ſword.—She ſpeaks of
ai, v. *chapeau*, m. *épée*, f. *Elle*, pro. *parle*, v.

an officer.—He[1] has[3] given[4] it[2] to[5] a ſai-
officier, m. *Il*, pro. *a*, v. *donné*, p.p. *le*, pro. *ma-*

lor[6]. — (There are) a bird and a cage.
telot, m. *Voilà*, adv. *oiſeau*, m. *cage*, f.

It muſt be obſerved, that the Engliſh article A or AN, before nouns of MEASURE, WEIGHT, NUMBER, and a PART OF TIME, muſt be rendered in French by the definite article *le, la, les:* ex.

Deux chelins le *cent,* Two ſhillings *a* hundred.

And by the prepoſition *par* uſed in the ſenſe of EACH, EVERY, or PER, ex.

Je lui donne deux chelins par ſemaine, I give him two ſhillings *a* week.

A or *an* is not to be expreſſed when it immediately precedes a noun in the nominative or accuſative caſe, denoting *title, dignity, office, buſineſs,* or *words* which denote the *gender,* or *ſpecies,* of things; and laſtly, after the verb *être,* to be, unleſs that verb be preceded by *ce* in the third perſon ſingular, or the above nouns be followed by one of the relative pronouns, *who, whom, which,* &c. or by an adjective in the ſuperlative degree: ex.

M. D —, membre de la chambre des communes, parla beaucoup hier, Mr. D—, *a* member of the houſe of commons, ſpoke very much yeſterday.

J'ai lu Caſtor & Pollux, opéra François, I have read Caſtor and Pollux, *a* French opera.

Etes-vous Anglois? Are you *an* Engliſhman?

Non, M. je ſuis François, No, Sir, I am *a* Frenchman.

Sa ſœur eſt marchande de modes & ſon frere eſt tailleur, Her ſiſter is *a* millener and her brother is *a* tailor.

EXERCISES ON THESE RULES.

Barley ſells for three ſhillings a
Orge, f. *ſe vend,* v. *trois,* adj. *chelin,* m.

buſhel. — That ale is worth ſix-pence
boiſſeau, m. *Cette,* pro. *aile,* f. *vaut,* v. *ſou,* m.

a pint. — Beef coſts four pence a pound.
pinte, f. *Bœuf,* m. *coute,* v. *quatre,* adj. *livre,* f.

This

This lace coſt a crown an ell. — He
Cette, pro. *dentelle*, f. *couta*, v. *écu*, m. *aune*, f. *Il*, pro.
ſells his beſt cloth a guinea a yard.
vend, v. *ſon*, pro. *meilleur*, adj. *drap*, m. *guinée*, f. *verge*, f.
My maſter comes twice a week. — Bur-
Mon, pro. *vient*, v. *deux fois*, adv. *ſemaine*, f.
gundy wine is ſold nine ſhillings a bottle. — My
ſe vend, v. *neuf*, adj.
uncle goes to France thrice a year. — She
oncle, m. *va*, v. *trois fois*, adv. *an*, m. *Elle*, pro.
gives three ſhillings a day and ten pence a mile. —
donne, v. *jour*, m. *mille*, m.
Are you a phyſician? — No, Sir, I am a
Etes, v. *médecin*, m. *ſuis*, v.
ſurgeon. — Briſtol, a ſea-port, paſſes now
chirurgien, m. *mer*, f. *port*, m. *paſſe*, v. *à préſent*, adv.
for the ſecond city of the kingdom of England. —
pour, p.
The[1] king[2] made[4] him[3] a biſhop[5]. — Is ſhe a
fit, v. *le*, pro. *évêque*, m. *Eſt*, v.
ducheſs or a marchioneſs?
ducheſſe, f. *marquiſe*, f.

OF NOUNS ADJECTIVE.

RULE to form their FEMININE GENDER.

Many adjectives in *al* have no plural for their maſculine, as *conjugal*, conjugal; *fatal*, fatal; *filial*, filial; *natal*, natal; *naval*, naval; *total*, total; and ſome few others.

Adjectives ending in *e* mute are of both genders, ex.

Un jeune homme, a young man.
Une jeune femme, a young woman.

Adjectives ending with one of the following letters, *d*, *é*, *i*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *t*, and *u*, form their feminine by adding an *e* mute: ex.

Maſc.	Fem.
Grand,	*grande*, great.
Poli,	*polie*, polite.
Aimé,	*aimée*, loved.
Civil,	*civile*, civil.
Demi,	*demie*, half.
Nu,	*nue*, bare, naked.

Theſe two laſt adjectives are indeclinable when they precede a ſubſtanſtive, but are declinable when they follow it: ex.

Une demi-*livre*,	a *half*-pound.
Une livre et demie,	a pound and a *half*.
Nu tête,	bare-head.
Nu pieds,	bare-foot.

There are a few ending in *an*, *as*, *el*, *il*, *eil*, *ien*, *in*, *ès*, *et*, *is*, *on*, *os*, *ot*, and *ul*, that double the final letter, before an *e* mute, for the feminine: ex.

Maſc.	Fem.	
Payſan,	*Payſanne*,	
Countryman,	countrywoman.	
Gras,	*graſſe*,	fat.
Gentil,	*gentille*,	genteel.
Eternel,	*éternelle*,	eternal.
Pareil,	*pareille*,	alike.
Chrétien,	*Chrétienne*,	Chriſtian.
Epais,	*épaiſſe*,	thick.
Bon,	*bonne*,	good.
Gros,	*groſſe*,	big.
Sot,	*ſotte*,	fooliſh.

The following are very irregular, and cannot be compriſed under any rule, *viz.*

Maſc.	Fem.
Beau, *bel*,*	*belle*, handſome, fine.
Benin,	*benigne*, benign.
Favori,	*favorite*, favourite.

* *Bel*, *fol*, *nouvel*, and *vieil*, are uſed before ſubſtantives beginning with a VOWEL or H not aſpirated.

Fou,

*Fou, fol,**	*folle*, fool,
Frais,	*fraîche*, freſh.
Long,	*longue*, long.
Malin,	*maligne*, malicious.
Mou,	*molle*, ſoft.
*Nouveau, nouvel,**	*nouvelle*, new.
*Vieux, vieil,**	*vieille*, old.

Adjectives ending in *c*, add *he* to the *c* for their feminine: ex.

Maſc.	Fem.
Blanc,	*blanche*, white.
Franc,	*franche*, ſincere.
Sec,	*ſeche*, dry, &c.

The four following are excepted:

Maſc.	Fem.
Caduc,	*caduque*, in decay.
Grec,	*Greque*, Greek.
Public,	*publique*, public.
Turc,	*Turque*, Turkiſh.

Thoſe ending in *f* change *f* into *ve* for their feminine: ex.

Maſc.	Fem.
Bref,	*breve*, ſhort.
Naïf,	*naïve*, plain, ingenuous.
Neuf,	*neuve*, new.
Veuf,	*veuve*, widow.
Vif,	*vive*, quick.

Adjectives ending in *x* change *x* into *ſe*: ex.

Maſc.	Fem.
Doloureux,	*doloureuſe*, dolorous, painful.
Heureux,	*heureuſe*, happy, &c.
Jaloux,	*jalouſe*, jealous.

The following are excepted.

Maſc.	Fem.
Doux,	*douce*, ſweet.
Faux,	*fauſſe*, falſe.
Perplex,	*perplexe*, perplexed.
Préfix,	*préfixe*, prefixed.
Roux,	*rouſſe*, reddiſh.

Declension of Nouns Adjective.

French adjectives muſt agree with their ſubſtantives in *gender*, *number*, and *caſe*: ex.

Singular.
Maſculine.

Nom. Acc. *Le bon livre*, the good book.
Gen. Abl. *du bon livre*, of or from, &c.
Dat. *au bon livre*, to the good book.

Plural.

Nom. Acc. *Les bons livres*, the good books.
Gen. Abl. *des bons livres*, of or from, &c,
Dat. *aux bons livres*, to the good books.

Singular.
Feminine.

Nom. Acc. *La bonne plume*, the good pen.
Gen. Abl. *de la bonne plume*, of or from, &c.
Dat. *à la bonne plume*, to the good pen.

Plural.

Nom. Acc. *Les bonnes plumes*, the good pens.
Gen. Abl. *des bonnes plumes*, of or from, &c.
Dat. *aux bonnes plumes*, to the good pens.

As two or more ſubſtantives in the ſingular are equivalent to a plural, the verb and adjective, or participle paſt, muſt be put in the plural when they refer to two or more ſubſtantives in the ſingular, and that adjective or participle is to be put in the maſculine, if thoſe ſubſtantives be of different genders; ex.

Le frere, la ſœur, le neveu, & la niece, ſont tous bons, — The brother, ſiſter, nephew, and niece, are *all good.*

Le roi, la reine, le prince, et la princeſſe, étoient ſortis, — The king, queen, prince, and princeſs, were *gone out.*

When two or more ſubſtantives of different genders are immediately followed by an adjective or participle, the French language requires that adjective or participle

to

to agree in gender and number with the laſt ſubſtantive; *except* thoſe adjectives or participles implying *union* or *collection*, ſuch as *joint*, *uni*, *réuni*, &c.

Il gouverne avec un pouvoir et une autorité abſolue,	He governs with an *abſolute* power and authority.
Elle laiſſa le coffre, le cabinet, et la chambre, ouverte,	She left the trunk, the cloſet, and the room, *open*.
J'ai trouvé les enfans, le pere, et la mere, réunis,	I found the children, father, and mother, *united*.

THE PLACE OF THE ADJECTIVE IN A SENTENCE.

Some adjectives are always placed before their ſubſtantives, and others after them; but there is a kind of adjectives which may either precede or ſucceed their ſubſtantives, as the euphony of the ſentence requires.

The following muſt be placed before:

Beau,	handſome, fine.	*Joli*,	pretty.
Bon,	good.	*Méchant*, *Mauvais*,	bad.
Brave,	brave.	*Meilleur*,	better.
Galant,	a well-bred man.	*Petit*,	little, ſmall.
Grand,	great, tall.	*Saint*,	holy, ſaint.
Gros,	big, large.	*Tout*,	all.
Honnête,	honeſt, civil.	*Vieux*,	old.
Jeune,	young.		

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING ADJECTIVES.

I have ſeen a handſome lady who (was ſpeak-
vu, p. p. *dame*, f. *qui*, pro. *par-*
ing) to an old gentleman.——He had a fine hat
loit, v. *gentilhomme*, m. *Il*, pro. *avoit*, v. *chapeau*, m.
and a pretty ſword.—She deſerved a better fate.
Elle, pro. *méritoit*, v. *deſtin*, m.
Your father was a brave general.——I know a
Votre, pro. *étoit*, v. *général*, m. *connois*, v.
young man who has a good horſe.—— He[1] has[2]
homme, m. *a*, v. *cheval*, m.

lent[4]

lent[4] it[2] to[5] an honeſt[6] man. — The apoſtle
prêté,p.p. *le*, pro. *apôtre*, m.
Paul was a holy man. —— My brother has bought
acheté p.p.
a good watch. ——— You have loſt all your
montre, f. *avez*, v. *perdu*,p.p.
money.

Some adjectives have very different meaning, according as they are placed before or after their ſubſtantive; as *une femme* ſage, a wiſe woman; *une* ſage *femme*, a midwife: and *une* groſſe *femme*, a big woman; *une femme* groſſe, a woman with child, &c. A little practice will remove many apparent difficulties.

Adjectives, expreſſing names of *nations*, *colour*, *figure*, *form*, *taſte*, *hearing*, and *touching*, thoſe that denote *natural* qualities, together with thoſe ending in *ile*, *ic*, and *ique*, as alſo the *participles*, when uſed adjectively, muſt be placed after their ſubſtantives.

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING RULE.

You have have an Engliſh hat, and ſhe has
Anglois,adj. *chapeau*,m. *elle*,pro. *a*,v.
a French gown —He reads an Italian pro-
François,adj. *robe*, f. *Il*, pro. *lit*,v. *Italien*,adj. *pro-*
verb. —— I like the German tongue, and a
verbe, m. *aime*, v. *Allemand*,adj. *langue*, f.
Spaniſh dreſs. ——— (It is) a ſquare place.
Eſpagnol,adj. *habillement*,m. *C'eſt*,v. *quarré*,adj. *place*,f.
She likes ſweet wine.—Your ſiſter has
Elle,pro. *aime*,v. *doux*,adj. *vin*,m. *Votre*,pro. *ſœur*,f. *a*,v.
an harmonious voice. —I have bought a white
harmonieux, adj. *voix*, f. *acheté*,p.p. *blanc*,adj.
gown and a black cloak. ——You have a faithful
noir,adj. *mantelet*, m. *fidele*, adj.
ſervant.

ſervant. ——— I eat green peas with
domeſtique, m. & f. *mange*, v. *verd*, adj. *pois*, m. *avec*, p.

boiled mutton.—Bring me a pound and a half of
bouilli, p.p. *mouton*, m. *demi*, adj.

cherries and half a pound of currants. —— We
ceriſes, f. *groſeilles*, f. *Nous*, pro.

had a kind reception, and we played at a
eûmes, v. *favorable*, adj. *accueil*, m. *jouâmes*, v. *à*, p.

diverting game. — He lives in a
divertiſſant, adj. *jeu*, m. *Il*, pro. *demeure*, v. *dans*, p.

cold country.—You have left the windows
froid, adj. *pays*, m. *laiſſé*, p.p. *fenêtre*, f.

and the door open.—Will you have a bit
porte, f. *Voulez*, v. *morceau*, m.

of roaſted chick? ——— She prefers a
roti, p.p. *poulet*, m. *Elle*, pro. *préfere*, v.

round table. —— Do you[2] read[1] the[3] Punic[5]
rond, adj. *table*, f. *liſez*, v. *Punique*, adj.

war?[4] —— He has made a raſh vow. ——
guerre, f. *fait*, p.p. *téméraire*, adj. *veu*, m.

Your ſiſter is an agreeable lady. —— I like
eſt, v. *agréable*, adj. *dame*, f. *aime*, v.

a grey ſtuff.—(It was) really a tragical
gris, adj. *étoffe*, f. *C'étoit*, v. *réellement*, adj. *tragique*, adj.

hiſtory.
hiſtoire, f.

When two or more adjectives belong to one ſubſtantive, the ſureſt way is to place them after it, with the conjunction *et*, and, before the laſt; and, if an adjective be uſed in a ſentence without a ſubſtantive, this adjective muſt always be rendered in French by the maſculine gender.

EXERCISES ON THIS RULE.

We have a juſt, wiſe, and boun-
Nous, pro. *avons*, v. *juſte*, adj. *ſage*, adj. *bien-*
tiful, king. —— Mr. Brown's daughter
faiſant, adj. *Monſieur*, m. *Brun*, m. *fille*, f.
is with a ſincere and generous lady. ——
eſt, v. *ſincere*, adj. *généreux*, adj.
I have a ſcholar of a ſolid, bright, and
écolier, m. *ſolide*, adj. *brillant*, adj.
lively, genius.—The wicked ſhall be puniſhed.
vif, adj. *eſprit*, m. *méchant*, adj *ſeront*, v. *puni*, p.p.
Miſs Preſton is a young, handſome, and
Mademoiſelle, f. *eſt*, v.
well-ſhaped, lady. —— She has married a ſober
bien fait, adj. *épouſé*, p.p. *ſobre*, adj.
virtuous, and amiable, man. —— The good
vertueux, adj. *aimable*, adj.
ſhall be rewarded.
ſeront, v. *recompenſé*, p.p.

DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

Adjectives and adverbs are the only kind of words that will admit of different degrees of more or leſs in the ſeveral qualities of perſons or things.

There are two degrees of compariſon:

1. *Le comparatif*, the comparative.
2. *Le ſuperlatif*, the ſuperlative.

Some grammarians admit of another degree, which they call *poſitive*; but this is merely an adjective, uſed in its ſimple ſignification, without expreſſing any increaſe or diminution: ex. *joli*, pretty; *aimable*, lovely.

The *comparative* refers to ſome other perſon or thing, and ſhews its *equality*, *exceſs*, or *defect*; it is therefore of three ſorts:

1. *Le comparatif d'égalité,* the comparative by equality.
2. *Le comparatif d'excès,* the comparative by exceſs.
3. *Le comparatif de défaut,* the comparative by defect.

The *comparative by equality* is formed by placing the adverbs *autant*, as much, or *auſſi*, ſo, before an adjective: ex.

Mon frere eſt auſſi *ſavant* que *vous*,	My brother is *as* learned *as* you.
Alexandre étoit auſſi *ambitieux* que *Céſar*,	Alexander was *as* ambitious *as* Cæſar.
Ma ſœur a autant* *d'argent* que *vous*,	My ſiſter has *as much* money *as* you.

The *comparative by exceſs* is formed by placing the adverb *plus*, more, before an adjective: ex.

Mademoiſelle A. eſt plus *ſavante et* plus *belle* que *Mademoiſelle B.*	Miſs A. is *more* learned and *more* handſome *than* Miſs B.
Sa couſine a plus* *de livres* que *vous*,	Her couſin has *more* books *than* you.

The *comparative by defect* is formed by placing the adverb *moins*, leſs, before an adjective, or *tant*, ſo much, or *ſi*, ſo, with the negation *ne-pas* or *point* before them: ex.

Votre couſine eſt moins *noble* que *vous*,	Your couſin is *leſs* noble *than* you.
Il a moins* *d'eſprit* que *ſa ſœur*,	He has *leſs* wit *than* his ſiſter.
Mon pere n'*eſt* pas ſi *riche* que *le vôtre*, *mais il* n'*a* pas tant* *d'amour propre*,	My father is *not ſo* rich *as* yours, but he has *not ſo much* ſelf-love.

* From the above inſtances it may be ſeen that, when the adverbs, *autant*, *plus*, *moins*, and *tant*, are immediately followed by a ſubſtantive, that ſubſtantive muſt be preceded by *de*. The pupil will at the ſame time obſerve, that, in French as well as in Engliſh, the conjunction *que*, as or than, are always the two terms of the compariſon.

N. B. The three following adjectives are comparatives by themſelves: *meilleur*, better; *pire*, worſe; and *moindre*, leſs; which ſignify *plus bon*, *plus mauvais*, *plus petit*.

The *ſuperlative* expreſſes the higheſt degree of any quality. There are two kinds of ſuperlatives: — The *relative*, which expreſſes the quality of a perſon or thing above all others of the ſame kind. In this caſe, one of the following articles, *le*, *la*, *les*, *de*, *du*, *de la*, *des*, *à*, *au*, *à la*, *aux*, precedes the adverbs, *plus*, moſt; *mieux*, beſt; *moins*, leaſt; before an adjective; or the adjectives, *meilleur*, beſt; *moindre*, leaſt; *pire*, worſe: ex.

Votre ſœur eſt la *plus belle et* la *meilleure femme de la ville*, — Your ſiſter is *the* handſomeſt (or the moſt handſome) and *the* beſt woman in town.

The *abſolute* ſimply expreſſes the quality of a perſon or thing in its higheſt degree. This happens when one of the adverbs, *très*, *fort*, *bien*, very; *infiniment*, infinitely; precedes an adjective: ex.

Votre oiſeau eſt très, fort, *or* bien, *joli*, — Your bird is *very* pretty.

Dieu eſt infiniment *bon*, — God is *infinitely* good.

When any of the comparatives by exceſs or defect are preceded by one of the poſſeſſive pronouns, *mon*, *ton*, *ſon*, *notre*, *votre*, *leur*, &c. they become ſuperlatives: ex.

Vous êtes mon *meilleur ami*, — You are my beſt friend.

EXERCISES UPON THE DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

You[1] are[3] [2]not[4] ſo[5] dutiful[6] as[7] your[8] brother[9].——Lucia is handſomer but more proud than her ſiſter.—I am as tall as you.—— My father is as rich as

êtes, v. *ne-pas*, adv. *obéiſſant*, adj. *votre*, pro. *frere*, m. *Lucie*, f. *eſt*, v. *mais*, c. *orgueilleux*, adj. *ſa*, pro. *ſœur*, f. *Je*, pro. *ſuis*, v. *haut*, adj. *vous*, pro. *Mon*, pro. *pere*, m. *riche*, adj.

as yours. —— His ſiſter is more covetous than he. —
le vôtre, pro. *Sa*, pro. *avare*, adj. *lui*, pro.

Nothing is pleaſanter to the mind than the light
Rien ne, adv. *agréable*, adj. *eſprit*, m. *lumiere*, f.

of truth. —— She is leſs polite than her
vérité, f. *Elle*, pro. *eſt*, v. *poli*, adj. *ſa*, pro.

daughter, but her daughter (is not) ſo revenge-
fille, f. *mais*, c. *n'eſt pas*, v. *vindica-*

ful as ſhe. — I am your moſt humble ſervant.
tif, adj. *elle*, pro. *humble*, adj. *ſerviteur*, m.

— Miſs D. (has not) ſo much wit as her ſiſter,
n'a pas, v. *eſprit*, m.

but ſhe has as much livelineſs and is as amiable
mais, c. *vivacité*, f.

as ſhe. —— The [1]richer[4] they[2] are[3] the more[5]
riche, adj. *ils*, pro. *ſont*, v.

covetous[8] they[6] are[7]. — My friend has a very
avare, adj. *Mon*, pro. *ami*, m. *a*, v.

beautiful country - houſe. ——— Nothing is more
beau, adj. *campagne*, f. *maiſon*, f.

lovely than virtue, and nothing is more deſi-
aimable, adj. *déſi-*

rable than wiſdom. —— Paris (is not) ſo populous
rable, adj. *ſageſſe*, f. *peuplé*, adj.

as London. —— My beſt friend is dead. ——— My
Londres. *mort*, adj. *Ma*, pro.

daughter is taller than your ſon by two inches. —
fils, m. *de deux*

Virtue is the moſt precious thing in the world. —
précieux, adj. *choſe*, f. *du monde*, m.

The lion is the ſtrongeſt and the moſt courageous
fort, adj. *courageux*, adj.

of all animals. ——— (There is) the handſomeſt lady
animal, m. *Voilà*, adv.

in London.—She has as much virtue and good ſenſe
de *ſens*, m.
as beauty.—Miſs P. is the mildeſt, politeſt, and
doux, adj. *poli*, adj.
moſt affable, of all her ſiſters.—Your brother is
affable, adj. *ſes*, pro.
taller than you by the whole head.—If France
tout, adj *tête*, f. *Si*, c.
were as rich as England, (it would be) the beſt
étoit, v. *ce ſeroit*, v.
country in the world.*
pays, m.

OF NUMBERS.

There are two kinds of numbers: 1ſt. The *abſolute*, which ſimply relates the number of the things ſpoken of, viz.

Un,	one.
Deux,	two.
Trois,	three.
Quatre,	four.
Cinq,	five.
Six,	ſix.
Sept,	ſeven.
Huit,	eight.
Neuf,	nine.
Dix,	ten.
Onze,	eleven.
Douze,	twelve.
Treize,	thirteen.
Quatorze,	fourteen.

* It may be obſerved, in ſome of theſe examples, that the prepoſition IN, following an adjective in the ſuperlative degree, muſt be rendered in French by one of theſe articles, *dr*, *du*, *de la*, *des*, according to the gender and number of the ſubſtantive to which it belongs. The prepoſition BY, when it follows an adjective in the comparative degree, is rendered by *de* only.

Quinze,

Quinze,	fifteen.
Seize,	ſixteen.
Dixſept,	ſeventeen.
Dixhuit,	eighteen.
Dixneuf,	nineteen.
Vingt,	twenty.
Vingt et un,	twenty-one.
Vingt-deux,	twenty-two.
Vingt-trois, &c.	twenty-three, &c.
Trente,	thirty.
Trente et un,	thirty-one.
Trente-deux, &c.	thirty-two, &c.
Quarante,	forty.
Cinquante,	fifty.
Soixante,	ſixty.
Soixante et un,	ſixty-one.
Soixante et deux, &c.	ſixty-two, &c.
Soixante et dix,	ſeventy.
Soixante et onze, &c.	ſeventy-one, &c.
Quatre-vingt,	eighty.
Quatre-vingt un.	eighty-one.
Quatre-vingt deux, &c.	eighty-two, &c.
Quatre-vingt dix, &c.	ninety, &c.
Cent,	a hundred.
Cent un, &c.	a hundred and one, &c.
Deux cens,	two hundred.
Trois cens, &c.	three hundred, &c.
Neuf cens,	nine hundred.
*Mille, mil,**	a thouſand.
Deux mille,	two thouſand.
Trois mille, &c.	three thouſand, &c.
Cent mille, &c.	a hundred thouſand, &c.
Neuf cens mille,	nine hundred thouſand.
Un million,	a million.

Theſe *abſolute numbers* are declined with the article indefinite, *de*, *à*, and are always placed before the ſubſtantive to which they are joined: ex.

* Mentioning the date of the year, we muſt write *mil* and not *mille*: ex. *L'an* mil *ſept cens ſoixante et dix-neuf*, 1779.

Trois hommes,	Three men.
Cinquante femmes,	Fifty women, &c.

They are invariable in their form, except *vingt*, twenty; *cent*, a hundred; and *million*, a million; which take an *s* in their plural.

It muſt be obſerved, that, when the number *un*, one, comes after *vingt*, twenty; *trente*, thirty; *quarante*, forty, &c. the ſubſtantive, relating to thoſe two numbers taken together, is put in the ſingular in French, though in the plural in Engliſh: ex.

Vingt et un homme,	One and twenty men.
Trente et un écu,	One and thirty crowns.
Quarante et un jour,	One and forty days, &c.

And, when the noun ſingular, in French, immediately following the *unit*, is attended by an adjective, that adjective muſt be put in the plural: ex.

Mon frere a vingt et un an *accomplis,*	My brother is full one and twenty years old.
Voilà trente et une guinée *bien comptées,*	There are one and thirty guineas well told.

However, cuſtom will have us ſay,

Vingt / *Trente*	*et un*	*chevaux.* / *volumes.*	
One and twenty horſes.		One and thirty volumes.	

2d. The *ordinal numbers*. This claſs of numerals, beſides the ſimple notation, ſignifies the order or rank of things, viz.

Le premier or *unieme,*	the firſt.
Le ſecond or *deuxieme,*	the ſecond.
Le troiſieme,	the third.
Le quatrieme,	the fourth.
Le cinquieme,	the fifth.
Le ſixieme,	the ſixth.
Le ſeptieme,	the ſeventh.
Le huitieme,	the eighth.

Le neuvieme,	the ninth.
Le dixieme,	the tenth.
*Le onzieme,**	the eleventh.
Le douzieme,	the twelfth.
Le treizieme,	the thirteenth.
Le quatorzieme,	the fourteenth.
Le quinzieme,	the fifteenth.
Le ſeizieme,	the ſixteenth.
Le dix-ſeptieme,	the ſeventeenth.
Le dix-huitieme,	the eighteenth.
Le dix-neuvieme,	the nineteenth.
Le vingtieme,	the twentieth.
Le vingt et unieme,	the twenty-firſt.
Le vingt deuxieme, &c.	the twenty-ſecond, &c.
Le trentieme,	the thirtieth.
Le trente deuxieme, &c.	the thirty-ſecond, &c.
Le quarantieme,	the fortieth.
Le cinquantieme,	the fiftieth.
Le ſoixantieme,	the ſixtieth.
Le ſoixante et dixieme,	the ſeventieth.
Le quatre-vingtieme,	the eightieth.
Le centieme,	the hundreth.
Le cent unieme,	the hundred and firſt.
Le cent deuxieme, &c.	the hundred and ſecond, &c.
Le deux centieme,	the two hundredth.
Le millieme,	the thouſandth.

Theſe *ordinal numbers* are declined with the article definite, *le*, *la*, &c. and are placed before their ſubſtantives: ex.

Le *premier jour du mois,*	*The* firſt day of the month.
La *cinquieme dame,*	*The* fifth lady.

Speaking of ſovereigns, we uſe the *abſolute number* in French, though the *ordinal* be uſed in Engliſh; but we place it after the ſubſtantive, as in Engliſh, without expreſſing the article *the*: ex.

Louis ſeize,	Lewis *the ſixteenth.*
Henri quatre,	Henry *the fourth.*

* No eliſion is to be made in the article before *onze*, *onzieme*; for, we ſay, *le*, *du*, *au*, *la*, *de la*, *à la*, &c. *onze*, *onzieme.*

However,

However, common uſage requires us to ſay,

Henri premier, Henry *the* firſt.
George ſecond, George *the* ſecond.

and not *Henri un*, *George deux*.

RECAPITULATORY OR PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES UPON ALL THE PRECEDING RULES.

Ignorance is the mother of admiration, er-
Ignorance, f. *eſt*, v. *mere*, f. *admiration*, f. *er-*

ror, and ſuperſtition.—The covetous deſpiſe the
reur, f. *ſuperſtition*, f. *avare*, adj. *mépriſent*, v.

poor.——Humility is the baſis of Chriſtian virtues.
pauvre, adj. *Humilité*, f. *baſe*, f. *Chrétien*, adj *vertu*, f.

—— Pride is generally the effect of ignorance.
Orgueil, m. *effet*, m.

—Give me ſome bread, meat, turnips, and
Donnez, v. *moi*, pro. *navet*, m.

water.—Merit and favour are the two ſprings
Mérite, m. *faveur*, f. *ſont*, v. *ſource*, f.

of envy. —— Intereſt, pleaſure, and glory, are the
envie, f. *Interêt*, m.

three motives of the actions and conduct of men. —
motif, m. *conduite*, f.

Is[2] it[3] [1]not[4] Peter's book?—Your father
Eſt, v. *ce*, pro. *ne-pas* *Votre*, pro.

is gone to London. — The father's houſe and
allé, p.p. *maiſon*, f.

the ſon's garden (are adjoining).—He found
fils, m. *jardin*, m. *ſe joignent*, v. *trouva*, v.

the windows and the door ſhut. —— Truth is
fermé, p.p. *Vérité*, f.

the bond of union and the baſis of human hap-
lien, m. *union*, f. *humain*, adj. *bon-*

pineſs;

pineſs; without it (there is no) confidence in
heur,m. *ſans*,p. *elle*,pro. *il n'y a point confiance*,f. *dans*,p.
friendſhip, and no ſecurity in promiſes.——The
amitié,f. *point*,adv. *ſureté*,f. *promeſſe*,f.
love of liberty and independence is the character
amour,m. *liberté*,f. *eſt*,v. *caractere*,m.
of noble minds.——Iron, ſteel, and braſs,
âme, f. *Fer*,m. *acier*, m. *cuivre*,m.
are more uſeful than gold and ſilver.——
ſont, v. *utile*, adj. *or*, m. *argent*, m.
I have ſeen the inſide of the church.——
ai,v. *vu*,p.p. *dedans*, m. *égliſe*,f.
Bring me my powder-box and my toupee-iron.
ma,pro. *mon*,pro.
I take a leſſon three times a week.——Have
prends,v. *Ayez*,v.
prudence and patience, and you (will have)
vous,pro. *aurez*,v.
ſucceſs.——A good conſcience is to the ſoul
ſuccès,m. *conſcience*,f. *âme*,f.
what health is to the body.——Merit and
ce que,pro. *ſanté*,f. *corps*,m.
virtue are the only ſource of true nobility.
unique,adj. *véritable*,adj. *nobleſſe*,f.
— Religion, commerce, and arms, are proper
Religion,f. *commerce*,m. *armes*,f. *propre*,adj.
inſtructions for a young prince.——Her father has
inſtruction,f. *à* *a*,v.
been made a knight of the order of the
été,p p. *fait*,p.p. *chevalier*,m. *ordre*,m.
Bath.——This cloth is equal to ſilk.—
Bain,m. *Ce*,pro. *drap*,m. *comparable*,adj. *ſoie*,f.
I ſee the coaſt of England.——A foreſt twenty
vois,v. *côte*,f. *forêt*,f.

miles

miles long and eleven wide. —— The example
mille,m. *exemple*,m.

of a good life is a leſſon for the reſt of
vie,f. *leçon*,f. *pour*,p. *reſte*,m.

mankind.———Lewis the ſixteenth is the grandſon
genre humain,m. *Louis*,m. *petit fils*,m.

of Lewis the fifteenth.——William, ſurnamed,
Guillaume,m. *ſurnommé*,p.p.

the conqueror, king of England and duke of
conquérant, m. *duc*,m.

Normandy, was one of the greateſt generals
Normandie,f. *étoit*,v. *grand*,adj. *général*,m.

of the eleventh century. He (was born) at Falaiſe,
ſiecle,m. *naquit*,v. *à*,p.

and was the natural ſon of Robert, duke of
naturel,adj. *fils*,m.

Normandy, and Arlotte, a furrier's daughter. ——
fourreur,m. *fille*,f.

Mrs. Nelſon's ſervant knows the price
Madame,f. *ſervante*,f. *ſait*,v. *prix*,m.

of all the proviſions. ——— Thomas was
tout,adj. *denrée*,f.

formerly a muſician, now he is a
autrefois, adv. *muſicien*, m. *à préſent*,adv.

dancing-maſter, to-morrow he will be a
danſe,f. *maître*, m. *demain*, adv. *ſera*, v.

painter. —— This water is very agreeable to
peintre,m. *Cette*,pro. *agréable*,adj.

to the ſmell.——We (are going) to Coxheath
odorat,m. *Nous*,pro. *allons*,v.

to ſee the camp. —— Bring us good wine,
voir,v. *camp*,m. *Apportez*,v. *vin*,m.

good beer, and the oil-bottle. —— The front
biere,f. *façade*,f.

of

of the king's palace (is not) ſo beautiful as
roi,m. *palais*,m. *n'eſt pas*,v.

I thought.——Generoſity excites admiration.——
croyois,v. *Généroſité*,f. *excite*, v. *admiration*,f.

The queen of France is very young.—Charles the
reine,f. *eſt*,v.

ſecond, the ſon of Philip the fourth, the grand-ſon
Philippe, *petit*,adj.

of Philip the third, and the great grand-child of
arriere petit fils

Philip the ſecond, left his kingdom to Philip
laiſſa,v. *ſon*,pro.

the fifth.—The inhabitants of the city of Dublin
habitant,m. *ville*,f.

have preſented a petition to the king.——It
ont,v. *préſenté*,p.p. *adreſſe*,f. *Elle*,pro.

was ſigned by one and twenty knights and
étoit,v. *ſigné*,p.p. *par*,p.

above two hundred citizens.——Good cider is
plus,adv. *citoyen*,m. *cidre*,m.

preferable to bad wine.——He has many
préférable,adj. *Il*,pro. *a*,v. *bien*,adv.

children and plenty of money.——The longer
beaucoup,adv. *argent*,m. *long*,adj.

the day is, the ſhorter is the night.——You
jour,m. *court*,adj. *nuit*,f. *Vous*,pro.

have a fine hat.—Shame is a mixture of the
avez,v. *Honte*,f. *mêlange*,m.

grief and fear which infamy cauſes.
chagrin,m. *crainte*,f. *que*,pro. *infamie*,f. *cauſe*,v.

—Pride and vanity are often the ſource of the
vanité,f. *ſouvent*,adv.

misfortunes of mankind.—We have good
malheur,m. *Nous*,pro. *avons*,v.

bread,

bread, excellent meat, and very large fiſhes.—
excellent, adj. *gros*, adj. *poiſſon*, m.

(Is there) any beer in the cellar? —— Mrs. B.
(Y a-t-il) *dans*, p. *cave*, f.

is a good, virtuous, prudent, and generous, lady,
vertueux, adj. *dame*, f.

ſhe has a daughter as beautiful as an angel. —
elle, pro. *a*, v. *ange*, m.

Pindarus (was born) at Thebes, a city of Greece.
Pindar, m. *naquit*, v. *à*, p. *Grece*, f.

——The pleaſure of the mind is greater than the
plaiſir, m. *eſprit*, m.

pleaſure of the body; and the diſeaſes of the
corps, m. *maladie*, f.

mind are more pernicious than the diſeaſes of
ſont, v. *pernicieux*, adj.

the body.——Health, honours, and fortune, united
Santé, f. *uni*, p. p.

together, cannot ſatisfy the heart of
enſemble, adv. *ne peuvent*, v. *ſatisfaire*, v. *cœur*, m.

man.—Miſs W——'s father, a banker in the
bunquier, m. *dans*, p.

Strand, is one of the richeſt men in town, but ſhe
Strand, m. * *mais*, c.

is prouder and more haughty than if ſhe were
orgueilleux, adj. *hautain*, adj. *étoit*, v.

the handſomeſt woman in Europe. — Hypocriſy is an
*

homage which vice pays to virtue.——
hommage, m. *que*, pro. *vice*, m. *rend*, v.

Give me a knife and fork.——— My father has
couteau, m. *fourchette*, f.

bought one and thirty fine grey horſes.—(He is)
acheté, p. p. *gris*, adj. *C'eſt*, v.

an

an intrepid man, and a man of honour and probity.
intrépide,adj. *probité*,f.

—Mr. C — has the moſt prudent wife in the town.
a,v. *prudent*,adj. *

——He found beauty, youth, riches, wiſdom, and
trouva,v. *jeuneſſe*,f.

even virtue, united in her perſon.——They
même,adv. *reuni*, p.p. *ſa*,pro. *Ils*,pro.

have a quantity of apples and pears. —— Vienna,
ont, v. *quantité*, f. *Vienne*,f.

the capital of the empire of Germany, is a fine city.—
Allemagne,f.

The rich, the poor, the young, the old, the learned,
ſavant,adj.

and the ignorant, are all ſubject to death.——True
ignorant,adj. *ſujet*, adj. *mort*,f. *Vrai*,adj.

friends are as rare as good melons. —— Henry
ami,m. *ſont*,v. *rare*,adj. *melon*,m.

the firſt, king of England, died the richeſt prince
mourut, v.

in Europe.—Paul is taller than you by an inch,
* *haut*, adj. * *pouce*,m.

but Mrs. Nichol's brother is the talleſt of
mais, c. *Madame*, f. *frere*, m.

all.
tout, adj.

* See the remarks on the prepoſitions IN and BY in the note, page 40.

SECT. III.

OF PRONOUNS.

There are ſeven ſorts of PRONOUNS:

1. *Les Pronoms perſonnels*, Pronouns perſonal.
2. *Les Pronoms conjonctifs*, Pronouns conjunctive.
3. *Les Pronoms poſſeſſifs*, Pronouns poſſeſſive.
4. *Les Pronoms démonſtratifs*, Pronouns demonſtrative.
5. *Les Pronoms rélatifs*, Pronouns relative.
6. *Les Pronoms interrogatifs*, Pronouns interrogative.
7. *Les Pronoms indéfinis*, Pronouns indefinite.

They have their genders, numbers, and caſes.

OF PRONOUNS PERSONAL.

Pronouns perſonal are thoſe which directly denote the perſons and ſupply the place of them.

There are three perſons.

The firſt is the perſon that ſpeaks: ex.

Je parle,	I ſpeak.
Nous parlons,	We ſpeak.

The ſecond is the perſon ſpoken to: ex.

Tu parles,	Thou ſpeakeſt.
Vous parlez,	You ſpeak.

The third is the perſon ſpoken of: ex.

Il or *elle parle*,	He or ſhe ſpeaks.
Ils or *elles parlent*,	They ſpeak.

Both Genders.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Je or *moi*, I.	*Nous*, we.
Tu or *toi*, thou.	*Vous*, you or ye.

Maſculine.

Il or *lui*, he, it. *Ils* or *eux*, they.

Feminine.

Feminine.

Elle, ſhe, it. *Elles*, they.

Theſe pronouns are never to be uſed but as nominatives to the verbs. The reſt are declined with the article indefinite: ex.

First Perſon for both Genders.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
G. Ab.	*de moi*, of or from me.	*De nous*, of or from us.
Dat.	*à moi*, to me.	*à nous*, to us.
Acc.	*moi*, me.	*nous*, us.

Second Perſon for both Genders.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
G. A.	*de toi*, of or from thee.	*De vous*, of or from you.
Dat.	*à toi*, to thee.	*à vous*, to you.
Acc.	*toi*, thee.	*vous*, you.

Third Perſon.

SINGULAR.

	Maſculine.	Feminine.
G. A.	*de lui*, of or from him.	*D'elle*, of or from her.*
Dat.	*à lui*, to him.	*à elle*, to her.
Acc.	*lui*, him.	*elle*, her.

PLURAL.

	Maſculine.	Feminine.
G. A.	*d'eux*, of or from them.	*D'elles*, of or from them.
Dat.	*à eux*, to them.	*à elles*, to them.
Acc.	*eux*, them.	*elles*, them.

There are two other pronouns of the third perſon, viz.

SINGULAR and PLURAL. Both Genders.

1ſt. Gen Abl.	*de ſoi*,	of or from one's ſelf, himſelf, herſelf, themſelves.
Dat.	*à ſoi*,	to one's ſelf, himſelf, &c.
Acc.	*ſoi*,	one's ſelf, himſelf, &c.

* HER, when ſtanding by itſelf, is to be rendered by *elle*, *la*, or *lui*; but, if joined to a noun, by the pronoun poſſeſſive, *ſon*, *ſa*, *ſes*.

N. B. Though it has been ſaid, that the perſonal pronouns are uſed for the names of perſons, it muſt not thence be concluded, that they are never employed for the names of animals or inanimate objects; this ſeldom happens in the firſt and ſecond perſons, but the perſonal pronouns, *il, elle*; *ils, elles*; may denote every object in nature, either animate or inanimate.

2d. The GENERAL AND INDEFINITE PRONOUN, *On*, one, is always conſidered as a nominative of the maſculine gender, and can never be uſed (in French) but in the ſingular, though the meaning be plural: ex. when we ſay,

On chante, on mange, They ſing, they eat;
i. e. ſome men or women ſing, eat.

The word *même*, ſelf, is very often joined to the perſonal pronouns, to denote, in a more eſpecial manner, the perſon ſpoken of: as,

Moi-même,	Myſelf.
Lui-même,	Himſelf.
Elle-même,	Herſelf, &c.

and are declined as above.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE PRONOUNS, *Je* and *Moi*; *Tu* and *Toi*; *Il* and *Lui*; *Ils* and *Eux*.

Je and *Moi* are uſed in two different ſenſes, though both in the nominative caſe.—*Je* is always followed or preceded immediately by a verb to which it is the nominative caſe, and has no need to be joined to any other pronoun; but *moi* always requires to be followed by one pronoun or more either expreſſed or underſtood: ex.

Qui a pris mon livre? Who took my book?
C'eſt moi, It is *I*.
That is,
C'eſt moi *qui l'ai pris*, It is *I* who took it.

Moi muſt be uſed inſtead of *je* before an infinitive mood, or at the end of a ſentence, when it is intended to expreſs ſomething ſudden, as *grief, ſurpriſe*, &c. ex.

Moi

Moi *lui parler!* *I* ſpeak to him or her!

In ſhort, *moi* muſt always be uſed in French as *I* in Engliſh, when it is followed by the pronoun relative, *who* or *whom*, or is preceded by the verb *être*, to be, uſed impersonally, as *c'eſt*, it is; *c'étoit*, it was, &c. ex.

Moi *qui vous aime*, *I* who love you.

C'eſt moi *qui dois y aller*, It is *I* who am to go there.

And, laſtly, *moi* is uſed whenever any difference or diſtinction is intended between perſons or things, in which caſe it muſt be immediately followed by *je*: ex.

Monſieur de la Tour commandoit l'infanterie, et moi, *je commandois la cavalerie.* Mr. de la Tour commanded the foot, and *I* commanded the horſe.

In all caſes mentioned in this rule, *moi*, *toi*, *lui*, *eux*, muſt be uſed inſtead of *je*, *tu*, *il*, and *ils*.

Of Conjunctive Pronouns.

Theſe pronouns are called *conjunctive*, becauſe they are always joined to ſome verb by which they are governed, and are generally uſed for the dative or accuſative caſes of the perſonal pronouns. There are three perſons in the conjunctive, as in the perſonal, which are,

For the firſt Perſon, both Genders.

	Singular.	Plural.
Dat. or Ac.	*Me*, *moi*,* me or to me, for *à moi*, or *moi*.	*Nous*, us or to us, for *à nous* or *nous*.

For the ſecond, both Genders.

	Singular.	Plural.
Dat. or Ac.	*Te*, *toi*,* thee, or to thee, for *à toi*, or *toi*.	*Vous*, you, or to you, for *à vous*, or *vous*.

For the third.

Singular.

Maſculine.

Dat. *Lui*, } him, it, or to him, to it.
Acc. *Le*, }
for *à lui*, or *lui*.

* *Moi* and *toi* muſt be uſed inſtead of *me* or *te*, after the ſecond perſon ſingular or plural of the imperative mood, conjugated without a negative.

Feminine.

Dat. *Lui*, } her, it, or to her, to it.
Acc. *La*, }
for *à elle*, or *elle*.

PLURAL.

Both Genders.

Dat. *Leur*, } them, to them.
Acc. *Les*, }
for *à eux*, m. *à elles*, f. *eux*, m. *elles*, f.
Dat. or Ac. *Se*, one's ſelf, himſelf, herſelf, themſelves, or *à ſoi*, or *ſoi*.

Five of theſe pronouns are uſed for the dative or accuſative caſe, and are of both genders, viz.
Me or *moi*, *te* or *toi*, *nous*, *vous*, *ſe*: ex.

Vous me *parlez*,	You ſpeak *to me*.
Il vous *croit*,	He believes *you*.
Vous me *priez de*, &c.	You deſire *me* to, &c.

In the firſt example, *me* is the dative caſe, becauſe it may be turned by *à moi*, to me; in the ſecond, *vous* is the accuſative, &c.

Lui and *leur*, when applied to animated beings, are uſed in the dative only, and are of both genders: ex.

Je lui *parle*,	I ſpeak *to him* or *to her*.
Vous leur *écrivez*,	You write *to them*.

The three others are uſed for the accuſative, and may be applied either to things animate or inanimate, viz.
Le, maſc. him, it; *la*, fem. her, it; and *les*, maſc. and fem. them: ex.

Je le *vois tous les jours*,	I ſee *him* every day.
Je le *ſais*,	I know *it*.
Nous la *connoiſſons*,	We know *her*.
Il les *enverra ce ſoir*,	He will ſend *them* to-night.

There are two other conjunctive pronouns, commonly called particles relative, or ſupplying pronouns. They are *en* and *y*.
En always denotes a genitive or ablative, and relates to ſome object mentioned before; it is rendered in Engliſh

Engliſh by *of* or *from him, her, it, them*; *about him, her, it*, &c. *with* or *without him, her, it*, &c. *at it*, &c. *for it*, &c. *upon it*, &c. *any, none, ſome, ſome of*, &c. *thence, thereof*; and ſometimes it is elegantly underſtood in Engliſh, though it muſt abſolutely be expreſſed in French: ex.

Nous en *parlons*,	We ſpeak *of him, of her, of it, of them, about him, about her, about it*, or *about them.*
*J'*en *ſuis fâché*,	I am ſorry *for it.*
Donnez-lui en,	Give him *ſome.*
Lui en *avez-vous porté?*	Did you carry her or him *any?*
Ne lui en *envoyez pas*,	Send her or him *none.*
Nous en *venons*,	We come *from it* or *thence.*

In the three laſt ſentences but one, it ſhould be obſerved, that the pronouns *of it* or *of them* are underſtood, in Engliſh, according to the object or objects mentioned before.

Y is uſed for the dative only; it is Engliſhed by *to it, to them, of it, in it, upon it, thither, there*, &c. and very often not expreſſed in Engliſh, though it muſt be in French: ex.

Nous n'y penſons plus,	We do not think *of it* any more.

It is the ſame with *le*, which, in Engliſh, is either not expreſſed or rendered by *ſo*; it is indeclinable in French, and prevents the repetition of one or more words: ex.

Etes-vous riche?	Are you rich?
Non, je ne le *ſuis pas*,	No, I am not.

In this laſt ſentence, *le* is uſed to avoid the repetition of the word *riche.*

N. B. It muſt be obſerved, that the following pronouns, *me, te, ſe, le, la*, and *les*, can never be uſed after a prepoſition; as we cannot ſay, *j'étois avec le, avec la*, I was with him, with her; but we muſt uſe the perſonal pronouns, *moi, toi, ſoi, lui, elle*, and *eux*, or *elles*, and ſay, *j'étois avec* lui, *avec* elle, &c.

EXERCISES

EXERCISES UPON THE TWO FOREGOING PRONOUNS.

The *pronoun perſonal* may be placed before or after the verb, agreeably to the Engliſh conſtruction: ex.

Je *parle*,	*I* ſpeak.
Avons-nous *parlé*?	Have *we* ſpoken? &c.

But the *conjunctive pronouns* are to be placed (in French) before the verbs by which they are governed, though they come after them in Engliſh: ex.

Il[1] me[2] *parle*,[3]	He[1] ſpeaks[3] *to me*.[2]
Nous[1] le[2] *connoiſſons*,[3]	We[1] know[3] *him*,[2] &c.

Except in the ſecond perſon ſingular and the firſt and ſecond perſon plural of a verb in the imperative mood conjugated affirmatively; in which caſe they come after the verb: ex.

Apportez-le moi,	Bring *it to me*.
Envoyons leur y en,	Let us ſend *ſome to them thither*.

But, when two imperatives are joined by either of the conjunctions, *et*, and, *ou*, or, the conjunctive pronoun or pronouns muſt precede the laſt imperative by which it is governed: ex.

Allez le trouver, et lui *dites de venir ici*,	Go to him, and tell *him* to come here.
Apportez-le moi, ou me l'*envoyez*,	Bring it to me, or ſend *it to me*.

The verb *fier*, to truſt; and *penſer*, or *ſonger*, to think; require the conjunctive pronouns after them; except only in anſwering a queſtion or ſpeaking of inanimate things: ex.

Nous nous fions à lui, à eux,	We truſt *to him, to them*.
Penſez-vous à elle?	Do you think *of her*?
Oui, j'y penſe,	Yes, I do (think *of her*).

When two or more of the conjunctive pronouns come together in the ſame ſentence, they muſt be arranged in the following order:

SINGULAR.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Me, m. & f. me or to me,	*Nous*, m. & f. us or to us,
Te, m. & f. thee or to thee,	*Vous*, m. & f. you or to you,
Se, m. & f. one's ſelf, himſelf, herſelf,	*Se*, m. & f. themſelves,

are to be placed before all others; next,

Le, m. him, it,	*Les*, m. & f. them,
La, f. her, it,	

before

Lui, m. & f. to him, to her,	*Leur*, m. & f. to them,
Y, to it, there, thither, &c.	*Y*, to them, &c.

And

En, m. & f. of or from him, her, it, &c.	*En*, m. & f. of or from them, &c.

the laſt of all: ex.

Il me le *promit*, he promiſed *it to me*.
Je vous les *donnerai*, I will give *them to you*.
Vous les lui *enverrez*, you will ſend *them to him* or *her*.
Nous le leur *fîmes voir*, we ſhewed *him to them*.
Elle vous y en *enverra*, ſhe will ſend *ſome to you thither*.

Except, however, from that rule, the pronoun of the firſt perſon, *moi*; which, in the imperative mood of a verb conjugated affirmatively, is placed after *y* and *en*: ex.

Apportez y en moi, Bring *me ſome there*.

Your brother bought yeſterday a very good
acheta, v. *hier*, adv.

book; and[1], after[2] having[4] read[5] it[3], he[1] gave[4]
après, p. *avoir*, v. *lu*, p.p. *le donna*, v.

it[3] to me.[2] —— I[1] am[3] very[4] glad[5] of[2] it. —
~ *me*. *ſuis*, v. *bien*, adv. *aiſe*, adj. *en*.

Do[1] not[5] lend[4] it[2] to her[3].—She[1] ſpoke[4] to
~ *ne-pas*, adv. *prêtez*, v. ~ *lui*. *parla*, v. ~

him[2] of it[3].—I ſee her and ſpeak to her (every
lui *vois*, v. *parle*, v. *tous les*

day). —— Carry it to her. ——I[1] (will[4] carry)
jours. *Portez*, v. *minerai*, v.

them[2]

them[2] thither[3] myſelf[5]. —— Do you[3] know[2]
les *y* ☞ *connoiſſez*, v.

them[1]?——I[1] will[3] write to them[2] myſelf[4]. —— He[1]
écrirai, v. ☞ *leur*

will[3] [2]not[4] ſell[7] it[5] to them[6], but he will
veut, v. *ne-pas* *vendre*, v. ☞ *mais*, c.

give it to you.——If[1] they[2] aſk[4] you[3] a[5]
donner, v. *Si*, c. *demandent*, v.

favour[6], will[3] you[4] refuſe[3] it[1] to them[2]? ——
grace, f. *refuſerez*, v.

He[1] has[3] taken[4] it[2] away[4] with[5] him[6]. —— I
a, v. *emporté*, p.p. *avec*, p.

find him more reaſonable than his ſiſter.——
trouve, v. *raiſonnable*, adj. *ſa*, pro.

Talk[3] no[2] more[4] of it[2].—I[1] thank[4] you[2] for
Parlez, v. *ne* *plus*, adv. *remercie*, v.

it[3].—Why[1] do you[5] give[4] it[2] to her[3]?—Had[4]
en. *Pourquoi*, adv. ☞ *donnez*, v. *Aviez*, v.

you[5] [2]not[6] promiſed[7] it[2] to him[3]? —— Do you[4]
ne-pas *promis*, p.p. ☞

[2]not[5] ſee[3] the[6] beauty[7] of[2] it? —— I[1] [2]never[5]
voyez, v. *beauté*, f. *ne-jamais*, adv.

will[4] conſent to[3] it. —— They are ſorry for
conſentirai, v. *y*. *ſont*, v. *fâché*, adj.

it. ——You[1] may[2] tell[5] it[3] to her[4], but do not
pouvez, v. *dire*, v. ☞

tell it to her brother.—Since you (have no)
dites, v. *ſon*, pro. *Puiſque*, c. *n'avez point*, v.

pears in your garden, I (will ſend) you
poire, f. *dans*, p. *votre*, pro. *jardin*, m. *enverrai*, v.

ſome. —— They[1] have[4] ſtolen[5] from us[2] the[6] great-
en. *ont*, v. *volé*, p.p. ☞

eſt[7] part[8] of[3] them.——Believe me, go[1] and
partie, f. *Croyez*, v. *allez*, v. ☞

ſpeak[3]

ſpeak[3] to them[2], do [1]not[5] [4]confide[2] in [3] it. — This
parler,v. ☞ *fiez*,v, *vous* *y*. *Ce*,pro.
noſegay is for her, and not for him.
bouquet,m. *eſt*,v. *pour*,p. *et* *non pas*, adv.
— My brother has written a letter to your
Mon,pro. *écrit*,p.p. *votre*,pro.
ſiſter, and[1] ſhewn[4] me[2] the[5] two[6] firſt[7] lines[8]
a montré, v. *ligne*,f.
of[3] it.—Does he[3] know[2] her[1]?——She returned it
☞ *connoit*, v. *rendit*, v.
to him.—We[1] have[4] forced[5] them[2] to[3] it.—Will[3]
avons,v. *forcé*,p.p. *y*.
you[4] bring[3] me[1] ſome[2].—He ſpeaks to me, and
apporterez, v. *parle*,v.
not to you.——I conſent to it.——Do you[2] think[1]
conſens,v. ☞ *croyez*,v.
that[3] ſhe[4] has[7] ſpoken[8] to him[5] of[6] it? —— Go
que *ait*,v. *parlé*, p.p. *Allez*,v.
and ſee her, and carry her theſe flowers.—We
☞ *voir*,v. *portez*,v. *ces*,pro. *fleurs*,f. *Nous*
truſt to them. —— If I had money, I[1]
nous fions, v. *Si*,c. *avois*, v.
would[4] give you[2] ſome[3], but you know as well
donnerois,v. *mais*,c. *ſavez*,v.
as I do how much it is ſcarce now. ——————
☞ *combien*, adv. *rare*, adj. *à préſent*, adv.
Send[4] me[2] [1]none[3] [5].—Have[2] you[3] any[1]?——I
Envoyez, v. *ne en pas*. *Avez*,v.
(will carry) them to you thither. —— Send it to me,
porterai,v. ☞
or bring it to me yourſelf.——Do [1]you[4] remember[3]
ou, c. ☞ *ſouvenez*,v.
(of)[2] it?——No, but[3] I[2] will[4] think of[3] it.
Non,adv. *mais*,c. *penſerai*, v. *y*.

—— Do

——Do not give it to him, give it to me. — Send
donnez, v.
ſome to them thither.

Of Pronouns Possessive.

Theſe pronouns are called *poſſeſſive*, becauſe they always denote property or poſſeſſion.

There are two ſorts of poſſeſſive pronouns, viz. abſolute and relative.

The *abſolute* are ſo called becauſe they muſt always precede the ſubſtantive to which they are joined, and agree with it (and not with the poſſeſſor, as in Engliſh) in *gender*, *number*, and *caſe*. They are,

Singular.		Plural.
Maſc.	Fem.	Both Genders.
Mon,*	*Ma*,	*Mes*, my.
Ton,*	*Ta*,	*Tes*, thy.
Son,*	*Sa*,	*Ses*, his, her, or its.
Both Genders.		
Notre,		*Nos*, our.
Votre,		*Vos*, your.
Leur,		*Leurs*, their.

They are declined with the article indefinite, *de*, *à*: ex.

Singular.

Maſculine.

Nom. Acc.	*mon pere*, my father.
Gen. Abl.	*de mon pere*, of or from my father.
Dat.	*à mon pere*, to my father.

Feminine.

Nom. Acc.	*ma mere*, my mother.
Gen. Abl.	*de ma mere*, of or from my mother.
Dat.	*à ma mere*, to my mother.

Plural.

Maſculine.

Nom. Acc.	*mes freres*, my brothers.
Gen. Abl.	*de mes freres*, of or from my brothers.
Dat.	*à mes freres*, to my brothers.

* *Mon, ton, ſon*, muſt be uſed before a noun feminine beginning with a vowel.

Feminine.

Feminine.

Nom. Acc. *mes ſœurs*, my ſiſters.
Gen. Abl. *de mes ſœurs*, of or from my ſiſters.
Dat. *à mes ſœurs*, to my ſiſters.

The others are declined as the preceding.

Theſe pronouns ought to be repeated before every ſubſtantive in a ſentence, though not expreſſed in Engliſh: ex.

J'ai perdu mon *chapeau et* mes *gands*, I have loſt *my* hat and gloves.

When theſe pronouns are uſed in a ſentence, ſpeaking of any part of the body, they are not to be expreſſed in French, but the prepoſition IN and the pronoun are rendered by the article definite; the perſonal pronoun being ſufficient to determine the poſſeſſion: ex.

J'ai mal aux *yeux*, I have a pain *in my* eyes, and not *dans mes yeux*.
Il ſe *caſſa* le *bras*, He broke *his* arm.

This will be ſeen among the idiomatical expreſſions.

ITS, THEIR, having a reference to inanimate or irrational objects, and placed in another member of the ſentence from that wherein the object referred to is itſelf expreſſed, are not made into French by *ſon*, *ſa*, *ſes*, &c. but by EN: ex.

Windſor eſt un beau village, *j'*en *admire la ſituation*, *les promenades*, *&c.* Windſor is a fine village, I admire *its* ſituation, walks, &c.
Cette maiſon eſt très bien ſituée, *mais l'architecture ne m'*en *plait pas*, This houſe is well ſituated, but *its* architecture does not pleaſe me.

The RELATIVE are never joined to any ſubſtantive; for, the ſubſtantive, to which they refer, is always implied in the pronoun. They are,

Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.	
	Maſc.		Fem.	
Le mien,	*les miens,*	*la mienne,*	*les miennes,*	mine.
Le tien,	*les tiens,*	*la tienne,*	*les tiennes,*	thine.
Le ſien,	*les ſiens,*	*la ſienne,*	*les ſiennes,*	his or hers.
Le nôtre,	*les nôtres,*	*la nôtre,*	*les nôtres,*	ours.
Le vôtre,	*les vôtres,*	*la vôtre,*	*les vôtres,*	yours.
Le leur,	*les leurs,*	*la leur,*	*les leurs,*	theirs.

They are declined with the article definite: ex.

Singular.

	Maſc.	Fem.
Nom. Acc.	*le mien,*	*la mienne,* mine.
Gen. Abl.	*du mien,*	*de la mienne,* of or from mine.
Dat.	*au mien,*	*à la mienne,* to mine.

Plural.

	Maſc.	Fem.
Nom. Acc.	*les miens,*	*les miennes,* mine.
Gen. Abl.	*des miens,*	*des miennes,* of or from mine.
Dat.	*aux miens,*	*aux miennes,* to mine.

The reſt are declined as the preceding.

When any one of theſe relative pronouns is uſed after the verb *être*, to be, ſignifying to belong to, it muſt be expreſſed in French by one of the pronouns perſonal in the dative: ex.

Ce livre eſt à moi,	This boook is *mine.*
Cette épée eſt à lui, *et non pas* à vous,	This ſword is *his*, and not *yours.*

Alſo, when it is joined to a noun ſubſtantive in Engliſh, it ought to be rendered in French by a pronoun poſſeſſive abſolute, and the ſubſtantive put in the genitive plural: ex.

Un de mes, *de* vos, amis, A *friend* of *mine*, of *yours*; i. e. one of *my* or *your friends.*

Of Pronouns Demonstrative.

Theſe pronouns are called *demonſtrative*, becauſe they diſtinguiſh, in a preciſe manner, the perſon or things to which they are applied. They are,

Singular.

SINGULAR.

Maſc.		Fem.	
*Ce, Cet,**		*cette,*	this, that.
Celui,	he, that.	*celle,*	ſhe, that.
Celui-ci,		*celle-ci,*	this.
Celui-là,		*celle-là,*	that.

PLURAL.

Maſc.		Fem.	
Ces,		*ces,*	theſe, thoſe.
Ceux,		*celles,* they,	theſe, thoſe.
Ceux-ci,		*celles-ci,*	theſe.
Ceux-là,		*celles-là,*	thoſe.
Ce qui,	*ce que,* what.		
Ceci, this,	*cela,* that.†		

Theſe two laſt are always of the maſculine gender and of the ſingular number.

Theſe pronouns are declined with the article indefinite, *de, à:* ex.

SINGULAR.

Maſculine.

Nom. Acc.	*ce livre,* this or that book.
Gen. Abl.	*de ce livre,* of or from this book.
Dat.	*à ce livre,* to this book.

PLURAL.

Nom. Acc.	*ces livres,* theſe books.
Gen. Abl.	*de ces livres,* of or from theſe books.
Dat.	*à ces livres,* to theſe books.

SINGULAR.

Feminine.

Nom. Acc.	*cette plume,* this or that pen.
Gen. Abl.	*de cette plume,* of or from this pen.
Dat.	*à cette plume,* to this pen.

* *Cet* is uſed before a noun maſculine beginning with a vowel or h mute: ex. CET *oiſeau,* this bird.

† The word THAT, whether expreſſed or underſtood, when it comes between two verbs, and is followed by a noun or pronoun, muſt be rendered in French by QUE, which muſt be placed immediately after the firſt verb: ex.

Je ſais QUE *votre frere eſt marié,* I know *that* your brother is married, &c.

PLURAL.

Nom. Acc.	*ces plumes*,	theſe pens.
Gen. Abl.	*de ces plumes*,	of or from theſe pens.
Dat.	*à ces plumes*,	to theſe pens.

SINGULAR.

Maſculine.

Nom. Acc.	*celui*,	he, him, that.
Gen. Abl.	*de celui*,	of or from him.
Dat.	*à celui*,	to him.

Feminine.

Nom. Acc.	*celle*,	ſhe, her, that.
Gen. Abl.	*de celle*,	of or from her.
Dat.	*à celle*,	to her.

PLURAL.

	Maſc.	Fem.	
Acc.	*ceux*,	*celles*,	they, them, thoſe, ſuch as.
G. Abl.	*de ceux*,	*de celles*,	of or from thoſe.
Dat.	*à ceux*,	*à celles*,	to thoſe.

The others are declined as the preceding.

N. B. He, ſhe, they, him, her, them, being immediately followed in a ſentence by *who, whom*, or *that*, uſed in an indeterminate ſenſe, not relating to any individual mentioned before, and only implying any *perſon, one*, or *any body*, muſt not be rendered in French by the perſonal pronouns, *il, elle*, &c. but by the above pronouns, *celui, celle*, &c. ex.

Celui *qui pratique la vertu vit heureux*,	*He* who practiſes virtue lives happy.
Celle, *que vous vîtes chez mon frere, n'eſt pas mariée*,	*She*, whom, or that, you ſaw at my brother's, is not married.
Vous puniſſez celui *ou* celle *que n'eſt pas coupable*,	You puniſh *him* or *her* who is not guilty.

The ſame rule muſt be obſerved with reſpect to *ſuch as, ſuch that*, uſed in Engliſh in the ſame ſenſe as *he who, they who*: ex.

Ceux qui *mépriſent la ſcience n'en connoiſſent pas le prix*,	*Such as* deſpiſe learning do not know its value.

Ce,

Ce, cette, ces, this, that, theſe, thoſe, muſt always precede the ſubſtantive to which they are joined, and agree with it in gender, number, and caſe. On the contrary, *celui, celle, celui-ci, celle-ci, celui-là, celle-là*, this, that, &c. either in the ſingular or plural, are never joined to any noun; for, the noun, to which they refer, is always implied in the pronoun: ex.

J'ai vu le portrait du pere et celui *du fils*,	I have ſeen the father's picture and *that* of the ſon.
Cette montre n'eſt pas à vous, c'eſt celle *de ma mere*,	This watch is not yours, it is *that* of my mother,

or my mother's; *that* being underſtood.

N. B. The pronoun *that*, either in the ſingular or plural, is often ſuppreſſed in Engliſh and ſupplied by an apoſtrophe and an *s* at the end of the noun ſubſtantive as above, but muſt be expreſſed in French by the above pronouns *celui, celle*, &c. according to the gender and number of the object to which it refers: ex.

Il a pris mon chapeau et celui *de mon pere*,	He has taken my hat my father's.
Vous avez déchiré ma robe et celle *de ma ſœur*,	You have torn my gown and my ſiſter's.

Sometimes the particles *ci, là*, here, there, are alſo joined to the pronouns *ce, cette, ces*, to diſtinguiſh, with more preciſion, the objects to which they are applied: ex.

Ce chapeau-ci,	This hat.
Cette ville-là,	That town, &c.

The two following expreſſions, *the former, the latter*, referring to ſubſtantives mentioned in a preceding ſentence, are elegantly made into French by *celui-ci, celui-là*, &c. and agree with the noun.

Celui-ci, celle-ci, this, applies to the neareſt object.

Celui-là, celle-là, that, to that which is more remote.

Ce qui, ce que, what. This pronoun is never joined to any noun; it always can be turned by *that which*, or *the thing which*: ex.

Je vous dirai ce qui *lui eſt* I will tell you *what* has
arrivé, happened to him;
that is, *that which*, or *the thing which*, has happened to him.

Savez-vous ce que *je lui* Do you know *what* I told
dis? him? &c.

Ceci, this, *cela*, that, are only uſed when ſpeaking of things, the word *thing* being always underſtood: ex.

Ceci *me plait*, *This* pleaſes me;
that is, *this thing* pleaſes me.

Cela *me fait peur*, *That* frightens me;
that is, *that thing* frightens me, &c.

EXERCISES UPON THE TWO FOREGOING PRONOUNS.

Give me my book. — I have met your
Donnez,v. *livre*,m. *ai*,v. *rencontré*,p.p.
ſiſter with a friend [illegible]ours.—She had loſt
ſœur,f. *avec*,p. *ami*,m. *avoit*,v. *perdu*,p.p.
her gloves and fan. ——— Have you found your
gand,m. *évantail*,m. *Avez*,v. *trouvé*,p.p.
pen? —— His daughter is older than mine,
plume,f. *fille*, f. *eſt*,v. *vieux*, adj.
but her ſon (is not) ſo tall as yours.—My
mais,c. *fils*,m. *n'eſt pas*,v. *grand*,adj.
mother has (a pain) in her head. —— Bring me
mere,f. *a*,v. *mal*,m. *tête*, f. *Apportez*, v.
that dictionary. —— I have found my hat and my bro-
dictionnaire,m.
ther's.—Men commonly hate him whom
ordinairement,adv. *haïſſent*,v. *que*,pro.
they fear. ——— Learn this leſſon, it is not ſo diffi-
craignent,v. *Apprenez*,v. *leçon*,f. *diffi-*
cult as that.—Take care of that child. —
cile,adj. *Prenez*, v. *ſoin*, m. *enfant*,m.

Her

Her brother ſays he will not refuſe you what
dit, v. *ne-pas refuſera*, v.

you aſk of him.—My ambition is the only
demandez, v. *ambition*, f. *ſeul*, adj.

cauſe of his imprudence.—Your houſe is more con-
cauſe, f. *imprudence*, f. *con-*

venient than hers, but it is not ſo well ſituated.—
mode, adj. *ſitué*, adj.

She, whom you hate, is my beſt friend.—You have
haïſſez, v. *amie*, f.

puniſhed him who did not deſerve it, and rewarded
puni, p.p. *méritoit*, v. *recompenſé*, p.p.

her who was guilty.—I have ſeen your father, mo-
ai, v. *vu*, p.p.

ther, brothers, and ſiſters.—She, who dines with
qui, pro. *dine*, v. *avec*, p.

us, is my brother's wife.—Her affection for me
femme, f. *affection*, f. *pour*, p.

is falſe. — I hope you will come ſoon to
faux, adj. *eſpere*, v. *viendrez*, v. *bientôt*, adv.

ſee us.—His coach is beautiful, I admire its
voir, v. *caroſſe*, m.

painting and ornaments.—Such[1] as[2] ſeem[3]
peinture, f. *ornement*, m. *qui*, pro. *paroiſſent*, v.

to[4] be happy[5] are[8] [6]not[9] always[10] ſo[7].—Your
être, v. *heureux*, adj. *ſont*, v. *toujours*, adv.

horſes are better than theirs.—They ſtole my
cheval, m. *volerent*, v.

watch and my mother's.—Tell her, my ſiſter will be
montre, f. *Dites*, v. *ſera*, v.

glad to ſee her. — She has a pain in her
bien-aiſe, adj. *de voir*, v. *a*, v.

teeth. — (It is not) my hat, it is hers; but this is
dent, f. *Ce n'eſt pas*, v. *c'eſt*, v.

better

better than that.—We ought to pray for them that
devons,v. *prier*,v. *pour*,p.

perſecute us.—Of all virtues, that which moſt
perſécutent,v. *le plus*,adv.

diſtinguiſhes a Chriſtian is charity.—Theſe candles
diſtingue, v. *chandelle*,f.

are better than thoſe.—This fan is mine and not
ſont,v. *non pas*

yours.—Give me this and take that.—This book
prenez, v.

and that I lent you are the two beſt.—Tell me
ai prêté, v. *Dites*,v.

what vexes you.—I have ſeen the king's palace, and
fâche,v. *palais*,m.

that of the queen.
reine, f.

Of Pronouns Relative.

Theſe pronouns are called *relative*, becauſe they have always a reference to ſome other noun or pronoun in the diſcourſe either expreſſed or implied. They are declined as follow:

Singular and Plural.

Both Genders.

Nom.	*qui*	who, which, that.
Gen	*de qui*, or *dont*,	of whom, whoſe,* of which.
Dat.	*à qui*,	to whom, to which.
Acc.	*què*, *qui*,†	whom, which, that.
Abl.	*de qui*, *dont*,	from whom, from which.

* Whose, being uſed interrogatively, muſt be rendered in French by *à qui*.

† *Qui*, whom, is never uſed in the accuſative but when it is governed by ſome of the prepoſitions: ex.

Avec QUI, With *whom*. *Pour* QUI, For *whom*.

Or, when it ſignifies *what perſon*: ex.

Amenez QUI *vous voudrez*, Bring *whom* you pleaſe:

that is, *what perſon* you pleaſe.

Acc.

Acc.	*quoi, que,*	what.
Gen. Abl.	*de quoi,* or *dont,*	of or from what.
Dat.	*à quoi,*	to what.

SINGULAR.

	Maſculine.	Feminine.
Nom. Acc.	*lequel,*	*laquelle,* which.
Gen. Abl.	*duquel,* or *dont,*	*de laquelle,* of or, &c.
Dat.	*auquel,*	*à laquelle,* to which.

PLURAL.

Nom. Acc.	*leſquels,*	*leſquelles,* which.
Gen. Abl.	*deſquels,* or *dont,*	*deſquelles,* of or, &c.
Dat.	*auxquels,*	*auxquelles,* to which.

The noun or pronoun, to which the pronoun relative has a reference, is called *antecedent*, with which it muſt agree in gender and number:

Je connois un homme qui *doit aller voir le camp,* — I know a man *who* is to go and ſee the camp.

In this ſentence *qui* has a reference to *homme*, man, becauſe I can ſay *lequel homme*, which man, &c.

J'ai lu la lettre que *vous m'avez envoyée,* — I have read the letter *(that)* you ſent me.

In this laſt ſentence *que* has a reference to *lettre*, letter, becauſe it may be ſaid *laquelle lettre?* which letter? &c.——The relative *que*, whom, which, or that, is ſometimes elegantly underſtood in Engliſh, but it muſt always be expreſſed in French: ex.

La dame, que *vous connoiſſez, eſt arrivée,* — The lady, you know, is arrived;

whom is underſtood in the Engliſh.

When the words *to which*, *to what*, *at which*, *at what*, *in which*, *in what*, have a reference to inanimate things, and when they can be expreſſed by *where*, *whereto*, *whereat*, or *wherein*, they are to be rendered in French by the adverb of place, *où*: ex.

Je vous montrerai la maiſon où *il demeure,* — I will ſhew you the houſe *in which* he lives;

that is, *where* he lives.

Voici

Voici la porte par où *nous entrâmes,* — This is the door *through which* we went in.

Quoi, what, is never uſed in the nominative caſe: in the other caſes it is generally uſed in an indeterminate ſenſe, and is never expreſſed but in ſpeaking of inanimate things: ex.

En quoi *ſe trompe-t-il?* — In *what* does he miſtake?

When we ſpeak of irrational beings, or inanimate things, in the genitive, dative, or ablative, caſes, we make uſe of *lequel*, *laquelle*, which, &c. inſtead of *qui*: ex.

Le cheval, auquel *vous donnez à boire,* — The horſe, *to which* you give ſome drink.

As alſo after a prepoſition: ex.

La fenêtre ſur laquelle *vous vous appuyez,* — The window upon *which* you lean.

And when *who*, *whom*, or *which*, refers to one or more objects on which the choice is to be formed: ex.

Apportez-moi lequel *vous voudrez,* — Bring me *which* you pleaſe.

Of Pronouns Interrogative.

Theſe are called *interrogative* becauſe they are only uſed in aſking queſtions, and have no antecedent: they are declined with the article indefinite.

Singular and Plural.

Both Genders.

Nom. Acc. *qui*, who, whom.
Gen. Abl. *de qui*, of or from whom.
Dat. *à qui*, to whom, whoſe.

Nom. Acc. *quoi*, or *que*, what.*
Or, *qu'eſt-ce qui*, *qu'eſt-ce que.*
Gen. Abl. *de quoi*, of or from what.
Dat. *à quoi*, to what.

* *N. B.* When WHAT, in Engliſh, ſignifies HOW MUCH, it muſt be expreſſed in French by *combien.*

SINGULAR.

SINGULAR.

	Maſculine.	Feminine.	
N. A.	*quel*, or *lequel*,	*quèlle*, or *laquelle*,	what, which.
G. A.	*de quel*, &c.	*de quelle*, &c.	of or from, &c.
Dat.	*à quel*, &c.	*à quelle*, &c.	to what, which.

PLURAL.

	Maſcüline.	Feminine.	
N. A.	*quels*, or *lequels*,	*quelles*, or *lequelles*,	what, which.
G. A.	*de quels*, &c.	*de quelles*, &c.	of or from, &c.
Dat.	*à quels*, &c.	*à quelles*, &c.	to what, which.

Qui, who, whom, as an interrogative pronoun, always refers to perſons and never to things, and it may be expreſſed by *quelle perſonne?* what perſon? ex.

Qui *eſt là?*	*Who* is there?
Qui *cherchez-vous?*	*Whom* do you ſeek?

Quoi and *que*, what, have always a reference to things and never to perſons, and may be expreſſed by *quelle choſe*, what thing: ex.

Que *voulez-vous*, or, qu'eſt-ce que *vous voulez?*	*What* do you want?
De quoi *parlez-vous?*	*What* are you ſpeaking of?

N. B. According to the French idiom *quoi* can never be put before a verb as its accuſative, it is always *que:* ex.

Que *dites-vous*, or, qu'eſt-ce que *vous dites?*	*What* do you ſay?

Quel, *quelle*, what, are always joined to ſome ſubſtantive with which they muſt agree in gender and number: ex.

Quel *livre traduiſez-vous?*	*What* book do you tranſlate?
Quelle *heure eſt-il?*	*What* hour is it?

But, to avoid repetition, *lequel*, *laquelle*, which, are elegantly uſed as ſubſtitutes for *quel* or *quelle*, and the ſubſtantive to which it is joined; and then *lequel* muſt always

always be followed by a genitive, either expreſſed or underſtood: ex.

Une de mes ſœurs eſt mariée,	One of my ſiſters is married.
Laquelle *eſt-ce?* that is, *laquelle de vos ſœurs eſt-ce?*	*Which* is it? *that is*, which of your ſiſters is it?
Je parle d'un de vos amis,	I am ſpeaking of one of your friends.
Duquel *parlez-vous?* that is, *duquel de mes amis parlez-vous?*	*Of which* are you ſpeaking? *that is*, of which of my friends are you ſpeaking?

Of Pronouns Indefinite.

Theſe pronouns are called *indefinite*, or *indeterminate*, becauſe they generally are ſubſtituted for the name of a vague and indeterminate object. Among them ſome are uſed as nouns adjective, being always joined to a noun ſubſtantive; others are ſometimes uſed as pronouns without a ſubſtantive, and ſometimes as adjectives with a ſubſtantive.

Aucun, aucune,	None, no one, not one, not any.
Autre,	Other, any other.
Autrui,	Other, other people.
Chacun, chacune,	Each, every one, every body.
Chaque,	Every, each.
L'un l'autre,	One another, each other.
Les uns—— les autres,	Some——others. Some——ſome.
L'un et l'autre,	Both.
L'un ou l'autre,	Either.
Ni l'un ni l'autre,	Neither.
Nul, nulle,	None.
Pas un, pas une,	No one, not one.
Perſonne,	Nobody, none, no one, any one, any body.
La plûpart de, des,	Moſt.

Pluſieurs,

Pluſieurs,	Many, ſeveral.
Quelconque,	Whatever.
Quelque,	Some, any.
Quelque choſe,	Something, any thing.
Quelque —— que, } *Quel —— que,* } *Quelle —— que,* }	Whoſoever, whatſoever, whatever, however, howſoever, though, &c.
Quelque choſe, qui, or *que,* } *Quoique,* } *Quoique ce ſoit que,* } *Tout ce qui* or *que,* }	Whatever, whatſoever.
Quelqu'un, quelqu'une,	Some, ſome one, ſomebody, any.
Quiconque,	Whatſoever, any body.
Qui que ce ſoit, or *fût,*	Whoſoever, nobody in the world, nobody at all, any body whatever, no man living, let him be who he will, be he who he may, &c.
Quoique ce ſoit, or *fût,*	Whatſoever, nothing in the world, nothing whatever.
Rien,	Nothing, any thing.
Tel, telle,	Such one, ſuch.
Tel qui, } *Telle qui,* }	Such as he, ſhe, they, who, that, &c.
Tout,	Every, every thing.
Tout le monde,	Every body, any body.
Tout —— que,	As —— as, for all, although, however, &c.

OBSERVATIONS ON SOME OF THE ABOVE PRONOUNS.

Aucun, aucune, is never uſed but in the ſingular, and always negatively, it relates to a perſon or thing mentioned before: ex.

Aucun ne *s'eſt encore aviſé de vous contredire,*	*No one* has yet taken into his head to contradict you.

Aucune n'*a porté la conſtance ſi loin*, — *Not one* has carried conſtancy ſo far.

In ſome ſentences expreſſing a doubt, *aucun* is uſed without a negation: ex.

Y a-t-il aucun, *ou* aucune, *de vous qui le ſouffrît?* — Is there *any* of you who would ſuffer it?

Autrui has neither gender nor number, and can only be uſed in the genitive or dative caſe, always referring to perſons: ex.

Ne faites point à autrui *ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu'on vous fît*, — Do not do unto *others* what you would not wiſh to be done unto.

Chacun, chacune, may be uſed in a general or limited ſenſe, mentioning perſons or things: ex.

Chacun *à ſon tour*, — *Every one* in his turn.

Les arbres portent leurs fruit chacun *dans leur ſaiſon*, — Trees bear their fruits *each* in ~~their~~ ſeaſon.

it's

L'un l'autre expreſs a reciprocity in the action, and may be applied to perſons or things: ex.

Ils ſe jettent des pierres l'un à l'autre, — They throw ſtones *to each other.*

Le feu et l'eau ſe détruiſent l'un l'autre, — Fire and water deſtroy *one another.*

L'un et l'autre always require the verb in the plural, and may likewiſe be applied to perſons or things: ex.

L'un et l'autre *ont raiſon*, — *Both* are in the right.

L'un et l'autre *ſervent au même uſage*, — *Both* ſerve to the ſame purpoſe.

Obſerve that *both* is not to be expreſſed in French when it precedes two nouns or pronouns united by the conjunction *and:* ex.

Son frere et ſa ſœur ſont morts, — *Both* his brother and ſiſter are dead.

Ni

Ni l'un ni l'autre require the verb to be put in the ſingular, if that pronoun be placed before the verb as its nominative, and in the plural, if it come after it; in both caſes, the verb muſt be preceded by a negation: ex.

Ni l'un ni l'autre ne *m'a repondu*, or, *ils* ne *m'ont reponda* ni l'un ni l'autre,	*Neither* of them have anſwered me.

Nul, pas un, are always accompanied with a negation, and can only be uſed as a nominative to the verb: ex.

Nul ne *peut ſe flater d'être agréable à Dieu*,	*No one* can flatter himſelf to be agreeable to God.
Pas un ne *le croit*,	*Not one* believes it.

Perſonne is likewiſe attended with a negation, *except* in ſentences of doubt, admiration, or interrogation: ex.

Perſonne ne *peut ſe vanter d'être ſans défaut*,	*Nobody* can boaſt of being without a defect.
Ne *parlez à* perſonne,	Speak to *nobody*, or, do not ſpeak to *any body*.
Perſonne *s'eſt-il jamais exprimé avec plus de grace que Sheridan?*	Did ever *any body* expreſs himſelf with more grace than Sheridan?

Quelque always expreſſes an indeterminate ſignification and is generally joined to a ſubſtantive with which it agrees in number: ex.

Quelque *auteur*,	*Some* author.
Quelques *philoſophes*,	*Some* philoſophers.

Quelque —— que. *Quelque* immediately joined to a noun followed by *que* expreſſes an indeterminate quality or quantity; it is declinable before a ſubſtantive and indeclinable before an adjective, and requires the verb to be put in the ſubjunctive mood: ex.

Quelques *efforts* que *l'on faſſe pour voiter la véri-*	*Whatever* efforts people make to hide truth, it is

té, elle ſe découvre tôt ou tard,	diſcovered one time or other.
Quelques *fautes* que *vous ayez faites, on vous pardonnera ſi vous vous repentez ſincerement,*	*Whatever* faults you may have committed, you will be forgiven if you ſincerely repent.
Quelque *équitables* que *ſoient vos offres, je doute qu'on les accepte,*	*However* equitable your offers be, I doubt of their being accepted.
Quelque *puiſſans* que *ſoient les rois, ils meurent comme le plus vil de leurs ſujets,*	*Though* kings be *ever* ſo powerful, they die as well as the meaneſt of their ſubjects.

Quel que, quelle que, muſt be thus divided when it is immediately followed by a verb or a perſonal pronoun, and agree in gender and number with the noun to which it relates; it likewiſe requires the verb to be put in the ſubjunctive mood: ex.

Quel que *ſoit l'ennemi dont vous appréhendez la malice, vous devez vous repoſer ſur votre innocence,*	*Whatever* the enemy be whoſe malice you dread, you ought to reſt on your innocence.
Les loix condamnent tous les criminels, quels qu'ils *puiſſent être,*	Laws condemn all criminals, *whoever* they may be.
Quelles que *ſoient vos intentions, &c.*	*Whatever* your intentions may be, &c.

Quelque choſe qui or *que, quoique, quoique ce ſoit que, tout ce qui* or *que*, always relate to things and never to perſons; with this difference, that in French we generally begin the ſentence with either *quelque choſe que* or *qui, quoique*, or *quoique ce ſoit que*, with the following verb in the ſubjunctive mood; on the contrary, we always make uſe of *tout ce qui* or *que*, when *whatever* can be turned by *all that which* or *every thing which*, and may be placed either at the beginning or in the middle of a ſentence, according to its ſituation in Engliſh, with the following verb in the indicative mood: ex.

Quelque

Quelque choſe qu'*on vous diſe*, or quoique ce ſoit qu'*on vous diſe, ne le croyez pas*,	*Whatever* may be ſaid to you, do not believe it.
A quelque choſe que, or *à* quoique ce ſoit que, *vous vous appliquiez*,	To *whatever* you apply yourſelf.
Je ferai tout ce qu'*il vous plaira*,	I will do *whatever*, or *every thing*, you pleaſe.
Tout ce qui *eſt agréable n'eſt pas toujours utile*,	*Whatever*, or *all that which*, is pleaſing is not always uſeful.

Quelqu'un, *quelqu'une*, relates to perſons or things, and makes *quelques-uns*, *quelques-unes*, in the plural.

Quiconque is indeclinable and always uſed in the ſingular: ex.

Il a ordre d'arrêter quiconque *paſſera par là*,	He is ordered to ſtop *whomſoever*, or *any body that*, goes that way.

Qui que ce ſoit, ſpeaking of perſons only, may be Engliſhed different ways; but, when by *whoſoever*, *what perſon ſoever*, it muſt always be followed by the pronouns *il*, *elle*, or *qui*, and ſometimes by both, unleſs it be governed by a verb or a prepoſition: ex.

Qui que ce ſoit qui *me trompe*, il *ſera puni*,	*Whoſoever* deceives me ſhall be puniſhed.
Qui que ce ſoit qui *vous parle de cette affaire, feignez de n'en rien ſavoir*,	*Whoſoever* ſpeaks to you about that affair, pretend not to know any thing about it.

When the above pronoun is Engliſhed by *nobody in the world*, *no man living*, &c. it muſt be attended with the negation *ne* before the verb: ex.

Je n'en ai parlé à qui que ce ſoit,	I mentioned it to *nobody whatever*, or to *no man living*.

When ſpeaking in the paſt tenſe, *qui que ce fût* muſt be uſed: ex.

Céſar ne vouloit ſe fier à qui que ce fût,	Cæſar would truſt to *nobody whatever.*
Il ne fit part de ſes projets à qui que ce fût,	He acquainted *nobody in the world* with his projects.

The above obſervation is to be made with reſpect to *quoique ce ſoit*, *quoique ce fût*, only uſed in ſpeaking of inanimate objects.

Tout —— que. *Tout* preceding a noun immediately followed by *que* is indeclinable in the maſculine and declinable in the feminine before nouns beginning with a conſonant: ex.

Tout *ſavant* qu'*il eſt*, *il ſe trompe quelquefois*,	*As* learned *as* he is, *or*, *for all* he is learned, he ſometimes miſtakes.
Toute *laide* qu'*eſt cette demoiſelle*, *elle ſe fait des amis par-tout*,	This young lady, *as* ugly *as* ſhe is, *or*, *for all* ſhe is ugly, gets friends every where.

To the above pronouns may be added the three following expreſſions, which are generally uſed in an indefinite or indeterminate manner:

Je ne ſais *qui*,	I *know not* who.
Je ne ſais *quoi*,	I *know not* what.
Je ne ſais *quel*,	I *know not* which *or* what.

Je ne ſais qui is only ſaid ſpeaking of perſons, and ſignifies a perſon we do not know: ex.

Il parle à je ne ſais qui,	He ſpeaks *I know not to whom.*
Elle fut abordée par je ne ſais qui,	She was accoſted by *I know not whom.*

Je ne ſais quoi is only ſaid of things, and ſignifies an object which cannot preciſely be named nor defined: ex.

Il ſe plaint de je ne ſais quoi, — He complains of *I know not what.*

We ſometimes put *un* before *je ne ſais qui*, and indifferently *un* or *le* before *je ne ſais quoi*: ex.

*Il parle d'*un je ne ſais qui, — He ſpeaks of *I know not whom.*

Elle s'eſt adreſſée à un je ne ſais qui, — She addreſſed herſelf to *I know not whom.*

Il y a là dedans un je ne ne ſais quoi *qui me plait*, — There is in that *I know not what* that pleaſes me.

J'ai lu une comédie intitulée Le je ne ſais quoi, — I have read a play which has for title *I know not what.*

Je ne ſais quel. In this laſt expreſſion, *quel* takes the form of an adjective and muſt always be accompanied with a ſubſtantive; it is ſaid ſpeaking both of perſons and things: ex.

Lorſque j'entrai, je vis je ne ſais quel *homme*, quelle *femme*, quel *tableau*, quelle *figure*, — When I went in, I ſaw *I know not what* man, *what* woman, *what* picture, *what* figure.

EXERCISES UPON THE FOREGOING PRONOUNS.

The man who ſold me theſe pens is very cun- *a vendu*, v. *ru-*
ning. — The lady of whom you ſpeak (is not) *ſé*, adj. *dame*, f. *parlez*, v. *n'eſt pas*, v.
handſome. — Other people's opinions are not the *ſentiment*, m.
rule of mine. — Miſs D ——, whom you love *regle*, f. *aimez*, v.
ſo much, is very ill. ——— The table, upon which *tant*, adv. *malade*, adj. *table*, f. *ſur*, p.
you write, is broken. — Who[1] told[4] it[3] to you[2]. — *écrivez*, v. *caſſé*, p.p. *a dit*, v.

He,

He, who was with you, related to me how
étoit,v. *a raconté*,v. *comment*,adv.
every thing had paſſed. —— She (will not)
s'étoit,v. *paſſé*,p.p. *ne veut pas*,v.
hear of the miſery to which he is reduced.—
entendre parler,v. *miſere*,f. *réduit*, p.p.
He (keeps company with) I know not whom, and that
fréquente, v.
diſpleaſes her. — No one is free from fault. ——
déplait,v, *exempt*,adj. *défaut*, m.
What[1] are[2] you[3] doing[2]? — Have you heard any
faites,v. *appris*, p.p.
news? — Shun vice, and love what is good.—
nouvelle,f. *Evitez*,v. *vice*,m. *aimez*,v. *bon*, adj.
Every one acts for himſelf.—Who was with
agit,v. *pour*,p. *étoit*,v. *avec*,p.
you? — It[1] was[2] a[3] gentleman[4] whoſe[5] name[10] I[6] know[8]
Ce *monſieur*,m. *nom*,m. *ſais*,v.
[7]not[9]. — Somebody knocks at the door, go and
ne-pas. *frappe*,v. *à*,p. *allez*,v. ☙
open it.—Men[1] generally[3] hate[2] him[4]
ouvrir,v. *Homme*,m. *généralement*,adv. *haïſſent*,v.
whom[5] they[6] fear[7]. —— (Here are) two pears, which
craignent,v. *Voici*,adv. *poire*,f.
will you have?——The man I ſent you was
voulez,v. ☙ *ai envoyé*,v.
honeſt. —— Both religion and virtue are the bonds of
honnête,adj. *lien*,m.
civil ſociety.—Is that the horſe for which you gave
ſociété,f. *avez donné*,v.
a hundred guineas?—Whatever[1] theſe[2] books[4] be[2],
☙ *ſoient*,v.
ſend them to me. — Whoſe[1] ſword[4] is[2] this[3]? — It be-
épée,f. *ap-*
longs

longs to I know not whom.—What crime is ſhe
partient,v. *crime*,m.

guilty of?—What is he ſorry for?—Nobody[1]
coupable,adj. *fâché*,adj. *de*.

ſpeaks[3] to you[2].—Whom[1] do you[3] ſeek[2]? —— Has[4]
parle,v. *cherchez*,v. *A-t-il*,v.

ſomebody[1] ſpoken[5] to him[2] of[3] it. —— Whoſoever[1]
parlé, p.p.

ſpeaks[3] to you[2], do [4]not[6] anſwer[5]. — Who was the
ne-pas répondez,v. *fut*,v.

firſt king of France?—They are two ſiſters; which[1]
roi,m. *ſont*,v.

do you[3] like[2] beſt[4]? —— Whatever you (may ſay,)
aimez,v. *le mieux*,adv. *diſiez*,v.

they ſhall be puniſhed. — She (finds fault) with
ſeront,v. *puni*,p.p. *trouve à redire à*

whatever I do. —— You ſpeak of the lady whoſe huſ-
fais,v. *parlez*,v. *ma-*

band has been ſo ill. —— Is there any thing more
ri,m. *été*,p.p. *Y a-t-il*,v.

ridiculous!—Some ſay ſhe is married, others ſay
ridicule,adj. *diſent*,v. *marié*, p.p.

not. ——— Whatever her fortune be, he ſays he ne-
que non,adv. *fortune*, f. *dit*, v. *ne-*

ver will marry her. — I ſaw nobody in the
jamais, adv. *épouſera*,v. *ai vu*,v.

world. — At[1] what[2] do you[4] play[3]? — That vexes me.
jouez,v. *fâche*,v.

— We will give you ſhortly what you have
donnerons,v. *dans peu*,adv. *avez*, v.

lent us. — As amiable as ſhe is, ſhe[1] does [2]not[3]
prêté,p.p. *aimable*,adj. *ne-pas*

pleaſe[4] me[3]—Every one complains of you.—There is
plait,v. *ſe plaint*,v. *Il y a*

I know

I know not what mean in that behaviour. — I love
bas,adj. *conduite*, f. *aime*,v.

neither of them.—Both are married.—From[1] whom[2]
ſont,v.

do you[3] know[4] it[5]?—He was ſo honeſt that he miſ-
ſavez, v. *étoit*,v. *ſe dé-*

truſted nobody at all. — (For[1] all[3]) they[4] are[5] rich[2],
fioit,v. *Tout que* *riche*,adj.

they[1] give[3] [2]nothing[4] to the poor[5]. —— They[1]
donnent,v. *ne-rien*,adv,

do[2] juſtice[3] to[5] one[4] another[6].
ſe rendent, v.

RECAPITULATORY OR PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES UPON ALL THE PRONOUNS.

I ſpeak French. — You ſpeak Engliſh. — We[1]
parle,v. *parlez*,v.

do [2]not[4] underſtand[3] what[5] they[6] ſay[8] to us[7]. —
ne-pas comprenons, v. *diſent*,v.

She[1] ſpeaks[3] to you[2] and[4] robs[6] you[5] (at the ſame[7]
parle, v. *vôle*,v. *en même*

time). —— We[1] have[4] [2]not[5] ſeen[6] them[3]. —Your
tems,adv. *avons*,v. *vus*, p p.

mother came (to ſee) me yeſterday, and I (will go) to
mere,f. *vint*,v. *voir*,v. *hier*, adv. *irai*,v.

ſee her (to-morrow.) — Is there any body that eſteems
demain,adv. *Eſt-il*,v. *eſtime*,v.

her more than I do? — They[1] are[2] happy[3], but[4]
ſont,v. *heureux*,adj. *mais*,c.

we[5] are[8] [6]not[9] ſo[7]. —— Whatever may be your
ſommes,v. *ſoient*, v.

troubles, you ought to write to me more frequently.
peine, f. *devriez*,v. *écrire*,v. *ſouvent*,adv.

— I

—I (will lend) you the book ſhe ſent me.—Be-
prêterai,v. *a envoyé*, v. *Cro-*

lieve me, he is very ill. ——I ſhall be very glad
yez,v. *malade*,adj. *ſerai*,v. *aiſe*, adj.

to go there with you; for, I have ſomething to
de aller,v. *avec*, p. *car*,c. *à*

tell him. —I love your ſiſter, and I owe her re-
dire,v. *aime*,v. *dois*,v. *re-*

ſpect.——Give me my hat and cloak.——I
ſpect,m. *Donnez*,v. *chapeau*,m. *mantelet*,m.

have dined with your father and mother.——They[1]
diné,p.p.

often[4] procure[3] me[2] that[5] pleaſure[6]. — They
ſouvent, adv. *procurent*, v. *plaiſir*,m.

have ſent you good apples.—Write to me,
ont, v. *envoyé*,p.p. *Ecrivez*,v.

do [1]not[4] write[3] to her[2].—Carry ſome to your ſiſter.
Portez,v. *ſœur*, f.

——I will do whatever you pleaſe. —London is the
ferai, v. *plaira*,v.

capital of England, as Paris is that of France.
capital,adj. *comme*,adv.

—Breſt is a fine ſea-port, in France, but its
mer,f.*port*, m. *en*,p. *mais*,c.

entrance is difficult and dangerous. —— Theſe books
entrée, f. *dangereux*,adj.

are mine, and not yours.——Your exerciſe is
ſont,v. *non pas*,adv. *thême*,m.

better than mine, but it is not ſo well as your bro-
bien, adv.

ther's. —— Do you[2] think[1] of[3] me[4]? — Yes, I
penſez, v. *à* *Oui*,adv.

do. —— You do not know what vexes me. —— I
penſe,v. *ſavez*,v.

will

will not accept of any of the terms which they
veux,v. *accepter*,v. *condition*,f.

offer me. — Whom ought we to worſhip? —
offrent,v. *devons*,v. *adorer*, v.

God, who is the father of them that love him, and
Dieu, m. *aiment*,v.

the protector of thoſe that fear him.—Thoſe trees
protecteur,m. *craignent*,v. *arbre*,m.

are well expoſed to the ſun, yet their
expoſé, p.p. *ſoleil*,m. *cependant*, adv.

fruits are not good. — I believe your uncle is arri-
crois, v. *oncle*,m. *arri-*

ved. — His ability is not ſo great as yours.—Two
vé,p.p. *habilité*,f. *grand*,adj.

rivals are generally enemies of one another. — Who
rival, m.

gave you that letter? —Your brother's ſervant. —
a donné,v. *lettre*,f. *domeſtique*,m.

What[1] does he[4] write[3] to you[2]?—That his library
écrit,v. *bibliothêque*, f.

is at our ſervice.——His letters pleaſe me ſo much
à ſervice,m. *plaiſent*, v.

that I wiſh to increaſe their number. — He, that
veux,v. *augmenter*, v.

wants virtue, wants (all things.) — That lady
manque de, v. *tout*, m. *dame*,f.

pleaſes you, for[1] you[2] are[4] always[5] ſpeaking[4] of[3] her.
plait,v. *car*,c. *toujours*,adv. *parlez*,v.

—The beauty of the mind creates admiration; that
beauté,f. *eſprit*,m. *donne*,v.

of the ſoul gains eſteem; and that of the body,
âme, f. *donne*,v. *eſtime*, f. *corps*,m.

love. —— Moſt friends are more attached to our for-
amour,m. *attaché*,p.p.

tune

tune than they are (ſo) to our perſon. — It is
que—ne, c. *Ce*

ſhe who told me that this houſe (is not) yours. —
a dit, v. *maiſon*, f. *n'eſt pas*, v.

Whatever her intention may be, I[1] do [2]not[6] love[3] her[5]
ſoit, v. *aime*, v.

the[7] leſs for[4] it.—Nobody in the world has complained
moins, adv. *eſt*, v. *plaint*, p.p.

of your conduct.—When you read the hiſtory of
Quand, c. *lirez*, v *hiſtoire*, f.

the Roman emperors, you will find one (of them)
Romain, adj. *empereur*, m. *trouverez*, v.

whoſe name was Nero.—The ſtudy of geography is
géographie, f.

abſolutely neceſſary to him who has a taſte for
abſolument, adv. *du goût*, m.

hiſtory.—He[1] that[2] ſold[4] us[3] this[5] clock[6] did[8]
a vendu, v. *horloge*, f. *a*, v.

[7]not[10] cheat[11] us[8].—What do you think of it?
ne-pas trompé, p.p. *penſez*, v.

—Whoſoever[1] cheats[3] me[2] ſhall[4] repent[6] (of[5]
trompe, v. *ſe repentira*, v.

it.)—Every body thinks we (ſhall have) peace. —
croit, v. *aurons*, v. *paix*, f.

England owes her riches to her naval ſtrength and
doit, v. *forces*, f. pl.

the encouragement ſhe gives to her commerce.—
donne, v.

We ſpeak of what has happened to him. — My
parlons, v. *eſt*, v. *arrivé*, p.p.

houſe is like others, it has its beauties as well
maiſon, f. *comme*, adv. *a*, v. *beauté*, f.

as its inconveniences.—She, who (was ſpeaking) to
incommodité, f. *parloit*, v.

you, is not yet married. —Do you know any
encore,adv. *marié*,p p. *ſi* *connoiſſez*,v.

of theſe ladies?—Yes, I know ſome of them—
Oui,adv. *connois*,v.

For[1] all they[5] are[6] young[2] and[3] handſome[4], they have
ont,v.

a great deal of modeſty and virtue. — Deſire him to
Priez,v. *de*

bring them here. —Is that the gown for which
amener,v. *ici*,adv. *Eſt*,v. *robe*,f. *pour*,p.

you gave five guineas?—There is I know not
avez donné,v. *guinée*,f. *Il y a*,v.

what in the colour which pleaſes much. —— To
dans,p. *plait*,v. *beaucoup*,adv.

what (does he apply himſelf?) — This apple and that
s'applique-t-il?

he gave you are very good. — Give me either of
donna,v. *Donnez*,v. *ſi*

them.—I[1] will[5] ſend you[2] ſome[4] thither[3]. — I can-
enverrai,v. *ne peux*

not ſell it to you for ſo ſmall a ſum. —I pre-
pas,v. *vendre*,v. *pour*,p. *ſomme*,f. *pré-*

fer the beauty of the mind to that of the body.——
fere,v.

Some love one thing, ſome another.—She ſays ſhe
aiment,v. *dit*,v.

hates that man, many think ſhe loves him.—
hait,v. *croyent*,v. *aime*,v.

He, whom nobody pleaſes, is more unhappy than
plait,v. *malheureux*,adj.

he who pleaſes nobody.—I was near your ſiſter
étois,v. *auprès de*,p.

when that happened to her.—Both his father and
quand,c. *arriva*,v.

mother

mother died on the ſame day.—As covetous as
moururent,v. *avare*,adj.

he is, he gave me one guinea.—Whatever has
a donné,v. *ſoit*,v.

happened to you, I am ſorry for it.—He would
arrivé, p.p. *ſuis*,v. *fâché*,adj. *voulut*,v.

do it in ſpite of any body whatever.—Learning
faire,v. *en*,p. *dépit*,m. *Science*,f.

is preferable to riches, and virtue to both.—Some phi-
phi-

loſophers have thought that fixed ſtars were
loſophe,m, *ont*,v. *cru*,p.p. *fixe*,adj. *étoile*,f. *étoient*,v.

as many ſuns.—(Here are) two grammars, which[1] do
Voici,adv.

you[3] prefer[2]?—I prefer this to that.——Both are very
préférez,v.

good.—He believes nothing of what you told him.
croit,v. *ne rien* *avez dit*,v.

—You blame him who does not deſerve it.—To
blamez,v. *mérite*,v.

whom did you ſpeak?—I ſpoke to nobody; for,
avez,v. *parlé*,p.p. *ai parlé*,v. *car*,c.

I ſaw neither of them.
ai vu,v.

SECT. IV.

OF VERBS, AND THEIR DIFFERENT SORTS.

Verbs are uſually divided into ſeven ſort, viz.

1. *Les verbes auxiliaires*, auxiliary.
2. *Les verbes actifs* active.
3. *Les verbes paſſifs*, paſſive.
4. *Les verbes neutres*, neuter.
5. *Les verbes réfléchis*, reflective.

6. *Les verbes perſonnels*, perſonal.
7. *Les verbes impersonnels*, impersonal.

Some of them are regular, that is to ſay, they follow the general rule of the conjugation to which they belong; others do not, and are called *irregular*.

The *auxiliary verbs* are, *avoir*, to have, and *être*, to be. Theſe two auxiliaries are uſed to conjugate all the compound tenſes of the other verbs.

The *active verbs*. In this claſs, the action is tranſitive, that is, it paſſes from the ſubject to the object: ex.

Le maître punit *les écoliers pareſſeux*, — The maſter *puniſhes* the lazy ſcholars.

The active verb ſometimes governs two caſes, one to which the action directly refers, or which is the direct object of the action, and is therefore called the *direct* or *abſolute caſe*; the other, to which the action refers but indirectly, and it is called the *indirect* or *relative caſe*: ex.

Votre ſœur a écrit *une longue lettre à mon frere*, — Your ſiſter *wrote* a long letter to my brother.

A long letter is the direct or abſolute caſe, and *to my brother* the indirect or relative caſe, of the verb *wrote*.— The direct caſe can be no other but the *accuſative* of a noun or pronoun, but the indirect is either the *genitive*, *dative*, or *ablative*.

In the *paſſive verbs*, the action is received or ſuffered by the ſubject: ex.

Les écoliers pareſſeux ſeront punis, — Lazy ſcholars *ſhall be puniſhed*.

In the *neuter verbs*, the action is intranſitive, that is, it remains in the agent: ex.

Je dors, I ſleep. | *Vous voyagez*, You travel.
Nous étudions, We ſtudy. | *Elle ſoupire*, She ſighs.

In the *reflected verbs*, the action returns upon the agent that produces it: ex.

Il ſe repent, He repents himſelf.
Elle ſe loue, She praiſes herſelf.

Theſe

These verbs have always *se* before their infinitive, and are conjugated with a double pronoun.

The *personal verbs* are those which are conjugated with three persons, in the singular and plural, throughout all their tenses.

The *impersonal verbs* have but the third person of the singular number.

N. B. There is a kind of verbs, which may be distinguished by the name of *reduplicative*, always expressing a repetition of the action: ex.

Re*commencer*,	To begin *again*.
Re*faire*,	To do *again*, &c.

In these verbs, the English word *again* is to be rendered in French by the syllable *re* prefixed to the radix of the verb, and not by *encore*.

The above verbs may be *simple* or *compound*.

A verb is *simple* which cannot be divided, without losing its meaning, as:

Appeller,	To call;	*Voir*,	To see;
Bâtir,	To build;	*Prendre*,	To take;
Mentir,	To lie;	*Vivre*,	To live;

which would mean nothing if they were divided.

A verb is *compound* when it is preceded by one or more syllables, as

R*appeller*,	To *re*cal.	Pré*voir*,	To *fore*see.
Re*bâtir*,	To *re*build.	Entre*prendre*,	To *under*take.
Dé*mentir*,	To *be*lie.	Sur*vivre*,	To *out*live, &c.

These last verbs are generally formed by prefixing to them part or the whole of a preposition.

CONJUGATIONS OF VERBS.

To conjugate verbs is to give them different inflexions or terminations, according to their *moods*, *tenses*, *persons*, and *numbers*.

MOODS.

Mood, or *mode*, in the sense it is taken here, is a grammatical term, which means the *manner* of affirming, or denoting, in the verbs, by different inflexions.

There are, in the French language, four moods, abſolutely diſtinct from each other, by the ſeveral inflexions or by ſome other difference. They are:

L'infinitif,	The infinitive.
L'indicatif,	The indicative.
L'impératif,	The imperative.
Le ſubjonctif, ou *conjonctif,*	The ſubjunctive, *or* conjunctive.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

This mood is ſo called, becauſe it only expreſſes the action or ſignification of the verb in an *indefinite* and *indeterminate* manner, that is, without affirmation, and without any relation as to time, number, or perſon: ex.

Parler,	To ſpeak.
Chanter,	To ſing.
Danſer,	To dance.

Of the Indicative Mood.

This mood is thus called, becauſe it not only *indicates* the affirmation in the different tenſes of the verbs, but likewiſe the time, number, and perſon; without being preceded or governed by either conjunction or verb: ex.

J'écris une lettre,	I write a letter.
Il chante une chanſon,	He ſings a ſong.

Ecris and *chante* are two verbs in the indicative mood, becauſe they do not require to be preceded by a conjunction* or another verb to make a complete ſenſe. The definition of this mood will be better underſtood, by comparing the little that has been ſaid with what is going to be ſaid with reſpect to the ſubjunctive mood.

Of the Imperative Mood.

The name, which has been given to this mood, is derived from a Latin word which ſignifies *to command*; and

* Among the conjunctions, ſome govern the indicative, others the ſubjunctive: this will be explained in time.

and the imperative is in fact but a manner of denoting in the verbs the action of *commanding*, *intreating*, *praying*, *exhorting*, and ſometimes *forbidding*: ex.

Ne mépriſez *pas les avis que je vous donne*, — Do not *deſpiſe* the advice which I give you.

It is eaſy to perceive that this manner of ſpeaking is but an exhortation, as if I had ſaid,

Je vous exhorte, je vous prie, de ne pas mépriſer mes avis, — I exort, I entreat, you not to deſpiſe my advice.

This mood has no firſt perſon in the ſingular, becauſe it is impoſſible to command one's ſelf; and, if it have the firſt perſon plural, it is becauſe one ſpeaks as much to others as to one's ſelf: as when we ſay,

Evitons *tout ce qui pourroit offenſer les autres*, — *Let us avoid* every thing that might offend others.

The ſecond perſon ſingular, the firſt and ſecond plural, admit of no pronouns before them; as to the third, in both numbers, it is always preceded by the pronoun *il* or *elle*, &c. and the conjunction *que*.

Of the SUBJUNCTIVE, or CONJUNCTIVE.

The name of ſubjunctive, or conjunctive, ſufficiently conveys what its uſe is in a ſentence. It may be defined thus; a manner of expreſſing the different tenſes of the verbs without any affirmation. In fact the ſubjunctive never affirms; it is always preceded by, or ſubject to, ſome conjunction; and, if it ſhould be met with in a ſentence containing an affirmation, that affirmation can only be expreſſed by the verb that precedes the ſubjunctive, which is uſed but to modify that affirmation. In the ſubſequent ſentence,

Je travaille afin que vous vous repoſiez, — I work that you *may reſt* yourſelf,

the affirmation is only expreſſed by *je travaille*, I work, and what follows only expreſſes the end which I purpoſe by working, viz. to procure you ſome reſt. Again,

Je

Je deſire que vous faſſiez votre devoir, I wiſh that you *may do* your duty.

I well affirm that I wiſh; but it is clear there is no affirmation in theſe words, *that you may do your duty*, ſince I do not ſay, that you do, that you have done, that you will do, your duty; but only that I wiſh you may do it. My wiſh is not doubtful; but it is very doubtful whether you will or may do your duty.

TENSES.

There are, ſtrictly ſpeaking, but three natural and proper *tenſes*, or *times*, in the verbs: viz.

Le paſſé,	The paſt.
Le préſent,	The preſent.
Le futur,	The future.

In the French language, the tenſes are divided in the following manner, viz. five in the infinitive mood; three of them are ſimple, the two others compound.

In the ſimple tenſes, the verb is expreſſed in one word: ex.

Parler,	To ſpeak.
Chantant,	Singing.
Danſé,	Danced.

The compound tenſes are conjugated with ſome one of the auxiliary verbs, *avoir*, to have, or *être*, to be, joined to a participle paſſive: ex.

Avoir parlé,	To have ſpoken.
Ayant chanté,	Having ſung.
Etre aimé,	To be loved.
Etant aimé,	Being loved.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Le préſent,	The preſent.
Le participe actif,	The participle active.
Le participe paſſif,	The participle paſſive.

COMPOUND.

COMPOUND.

Le prétérit,	The preterite.
Le participe paſſé, ou compoſé,	The participle paſt, or compound.

There are ten tenſes in the indicative mood, viz. five ſimple and five compound: they are,

SIMPLE.

Le préſent,	The preſent.
L'imparfait,	The imperfect.
Le prétérit défini,	The preterite definite.
Le futur,	The future.
Le conditionel préſent,	The conditional preſent.

COMPOUND.

Le prétérit indéfini,	The preterite indefinite.
Le prétérit antérieur défini,	The preterite anterior definite.
Le pluſqueparfait,	The preterpluperfect.
Le futur paſſé, ou compoſé,	The future paſt, or compound.
Le conditionel paſſé,	The conditional paſt.

N. B. The imperative admits of no tenſe but the preſent.

The ſubjunctive mood has four tenſes; two ſimple, and two compound.

SIMPLE.

Le préſent,	The preſent.
L'imparfait,	The imperfect.

COMPOUND.

Le prétérit,	The preterite.
Le pluſqueparfait,	The preterpluperfect.

Before we proceed any farther on the conjugations, it has been thought proper to explain the different uſes of the above tenſes, as one of the moſt important articles in

a language, whoſe preciſion partly depends on the difference which cuſtom ſets between one tenſe and another with regard to the ſenſe of the ſentence. We ſhall endeavour to be ſhort and conciſe, and ſay nothing but what is uſeful, in hopes that the following explanation will be ſufficient to remove a difficulty which conſtantly puzzles the learners.

TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

SIMPLE.

PRESENT.

This tenſe is uſed when the ſtate, action, or impreſſion, mentioned by the verb, *is exiſting*, *doing*, or *happening*; at the very time we are ſpeaking: ex.

Je me porte *bien*,	I *am* well.
Votre ſœur eſt *malade*,	Your ſiſter *is* ill.
Nous nous promenons,	We *are walking*.
Vous écrivez,	You *are writing*.
Ils jouent,	They *are playing*, &c.

The preſent is alſo uſed.

1°. When ſpeaking of actions or things which we *habitually* do, *are accuſtomed* to do, or *can* do: ex.

Nous dinons *toujours à deux heures*,	We always *dine* at two o'clock.
Elle étudie *l'hiſtoire*,	She *ſtudies* hiſtory.
Vous parlez *François*,	You *ſpeak* French.
Lit-*il l'Anglois?*	Does he *read* Engliſh?

2°. When ſpeaking of actions which are to be done in a very ſhort time, we generally uſe this tenſe inſtead of the future: ex.

Je pars *ce ſoir pour la campagne*,	I *ſet out* this evening for the country.
Que faites-*vous demain?*	What *do* you to-morrow?

Inſtead of

Je partirai *ce ſoir pour la campagne*,	I *ſhall ſet out* this evening for the country.
Que ferez-*vous demain?*	What *will* you *do* to-morrow?

3°. This

3°. This tenſe is alſo conſtantly uſed in French inſtead of the preterite definite or preterite indefinite, eſpecially in *orations*, or *ſet diſcourſes*, and in *poetry*, in order to repreſent a paſt action or event as preſent to the mind of the hearers or readers.

IMPERFECT.

This tenſe has two uſes; *in the firſt*, which probably is the origin of its name, it expreſſes an action *preſent* or *doing* at the time of an action *that is paſt*: as when I ſay,

Mon frere apprenoit *ſa leçon quand vous arrivâtes*,	My brother *was learning* his leſſon when you arrived.

In the above ſentence, the act of learning, though paſt with reſpect to my narration, was preſent at the moment your arrival took place; therefore this tenſe is but imperfectly preterite and imperfectly preſent.

In the ſecond, the imperfect is employed every time we ſpeak of *actions of habit*, or *actions reiterated*, at a time which is not *defined*: ex.

*Quand j'*étois *à Londres, j'*allois *ſouvent voir mes amis*,	When I *was* in London, I often *went* to ſee my friends;

that is, I often *uſed* to go, or I frequently *went*, &c.

The imperfect is likewiſe uſed when we ſpeak of the *character*, or ſome *inherent* and *diſtinctive quality*, of perſons or things no longer exiſting; and after the Engliſh conjunction *if*, though the verb be preceded by *ſhould*, *could*, *would*: ex.

Philippe, pere d'Alexandre le Grand, étoit *le plus fin politique de ſon tems*,	Philip, the father of Alexander the Great, *was* the deepeſt politician of his time.
Céſar avoit *je ne ſais quoi de grand dans la phyſionomie*,	Cæſar *had* I know not what of great in his phyſiognomy.
Carthage faiſoit *un prodigieux commerce par le mo-*	Carthage *carried on* a prodigious trade by the

yen

yen de ſes vaiſſeaux, qui alloient *juſqu'aux Indes,*	means of her ſhips, which *went* as far as the Indies.
Palmire et Perſépolis étoient *de grandes et belles villes,*	Palmyra and Perſepolis *were* large and fine cities.
S'*il* venoit, *je le payerois,*	*If* he *would come*, or *came*, I would pay him.
George II. étoit *d'une taille plutôt petite que moyenne; il* avoit *les yeux très ſaillans, le nez grand, et une belle complexion; il* étoit *doux, modéré, et humain; ſobre et régulier dans ſa maniere de vivre: il ſe* plaiſoit *dans la pompe et dans l'appareil militaire, et* étoit *naturellement brave: il* aimoit *la guerre comme ſoldat, l'*étudioit *comme une ſcience, et* avoit, *ſur ce ſujet, une correſpondence établie avec quelques-uns des plus grands généraux que l'Almagne ait produits,*	George II. *was*, in his perſon, rather lower than the middle ſize; he *had* remarkably prominent eyes, a high noſe, and a fair complexion; he *was* mild, moderate, and humane; in his way of living, ſober and regular: he *delighted* in military pomp and parade, and *was* naturally brave: he *loved* war as a ſoldier, he *ſtudied* it as a ſcience, and *had*, on that account, a ſettled correſpondence with ſome of the greateſt generals whom Germany had produced.

From the above inſtances it might confidently be believed that every difficulty attending the uſe of this tenſe will be entirely removed; I ſhall, however, add, as a farther illuſtration, that whenever the verb, which in Engliſh is in the preterite, can be made by the paſt tenſe of the verb *to be*, and that preterite changed into the participle active, or when that preterite can be turned by the verb in the infinitive mood preceded by *uſed*, that paſt tenſe muſt be made in French by the imperfect.

Preterite Definite.

This tenſe is ſo called becauſe it always expreſſes an action done at a time *determined* or *ſpecified* by an adverb, or ſome circumſtance in the ſpeech, and ſo entirely

tirely elaſped that nothing more remains of the time when that action was doing: ex.

Je fus *malade* hier *pendant deux heures*,	I *was* ill *yeſterday* for two hours.
La derniere fois *que nous* allâmes *le voir, nous* eumes *un accueil favorable*,	The *laſt* ſee[illegible]ime we *went* to [illegible]im. We *had* a kind [illegible]ception.
Vous écrivites *à votre frere* il y a huit jours,	You *wrote* to your brother *eight days ago.*
Ils eſſuyerent *de grandes pertes l'année* paſſée,	They *underwent* great loſſes *laſt year.*

FUTURE.

This tenſe ſimply expreſſes that an action will be done at a time that is not yet come: ex.

Je vous verrai *demain à Londres*,	I *will ſee* you to-morrow in London.
Mon frere vous écrira *la ſemaine prochaine*,	My brother *will write* to you next week.

In French, as well as in Engliſh, we ſometimes expreſs an action that is to be done inſtantly by the verb *aller*, or *s'en aller*, immediately followed by an infinitive; ex.

Je vais, or *je m'*en vais, écrire *à ma tante*,	I *am going to write* to my aunt.
Je vais, or *je m'*en vais, partir,	I *am going to ſet out.*

Which ſignify:

Je lui écrirai *tout préſentement*,	I *will write* to her preſently.
Je partirai *dans l'inſtant*,	I *will ſet out* inſtantly.

To expreſs an uncertainty in a future tenſe, that is, to expreſs that it is not decided that ſuch a thing will be done, we make uſe of the verb *devoir* immediately followed by a verb in the infinitive mood, and that is the only inſtance wherein *devoir* does not imply *obligation, neceſſity, &c.* ex.

Le roi doit partir *pour Cheltenham vers le milieu du mois de Juillet, et ne* doit revenir *qu' à la fin du mois d'Août,*	The king *is to ſet out* for Cheltenham about the middle of July, and *is* not *to return* till the latter end of Auguſt.
That is,	
On ſuppoſe que le roi partira, &c. *et qu'il ne* reviendra, &c.	It is ſuppoſed that the king *will ſet out*, *&c.* and *will* not *return* till, *&c.*

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

The name of this tenſe is a true definition of it: in fact it is always uſed to expreſs ſome *condition* or *ſuppoſition*, and has always a reference to the *preſent*, becauſe, by ſuppoſing the condition effected, the action, mentioned by the conditional, becomes preſent: ex.

Je lirois *ſi j'avois des livres,*	I *would read* if I had books.
Vous auriez *la fievre ſi vous mangiez de ce fruit,*	You *would have* the fever if you ate of that fruit.
Je ſerois *mortifié s'il perdoit ſon procès,*	I *ſhould be* mortified if he ſhould loſe his law-ſuit.

It is ſometimes uſed, inſtead of the future, after the conjunction *que:* ex.

Il a promis qu'*il* viendroit,	He has promiſed *to come*, or *that* he *will come.*

This tenſe is often called the *uncertain tenſe*, becauſe it expreſſes an action made uncertain by the conditional that follows it, and ſome grammarians place it among the tenſes of the ſubjunctive mood, though it be very certain that it never is governed by any of the conjunctions which require a ſubjunctive mood after them.

COMPOUND TENSES.

PRETERITE INDEFINITE.

The preterite indefinite is employed in two different manners.

1. It expreſſes an action paſt in an indeterminate time, but not too much diſtant from the time we ſpeak: thus we muſt ſay,

J'ai

J'ai vu mademoiſelle votre ſœur et lui ai parlé,	I *have ſeen* your ſiſter and ſpoken to her.
Le Roi de Pruſſe a conquis *la Sileſie,*	The King of Pruſſia *has conquered* Sileſia.
Cela s'eſt paſſé *avantageuſement pour votre couſin,*	That *has paſſed* advantageouſly for your couſin.

In the above ſentences, the action is certainly paſt, but the time when it paſt is neither determined nor ſpecified.

2°. It expreſſes a time definite and determinate, but of which there yet remains ſome part to elapſe: ex.

Les fruits ont *très bien* réuſſi *cette année,*	Fruits *have* very well *ſucceeded* this year.
*Nous n'*avons *pas* eu *beaucoup de neige cet hiver,*	We *have* not *had* much ſnow this winter.
Il a plu *toute cette ſemaine, tout ce mois,*	It *has rained* all this week, all this month.
Nous avons vu *d'étranges choſes dans ce ſiecle,*	We *have ſeen* ſtrange things in this century.

In the above ſentences, *this year*, *this week*, *this winter*, &c. are times which ſtill laſt and are not yet elapſed.

To expreſs an action recently paſt, we ſometimes make uſe of the verb *venir* immediately followed by *de* and the verb in the infinite mood: ex.

Je viens de *le* voir paſſer,	I *have juſt ſeen* him *go by.*
Le roi vient d'arriver,	The king *is but juſt arrived.*
Elle vient d'expirer,	She *is but juſt dead.*

The ſame tenſe may be expreſſed by the verb *faire* preceded by the negation *ne* and followed by the conjunction *que* with an infinitive preceded by *de*: ex.

Il ne fait que d'*arriver,*	He *is but juſt* arrived.
Je ne fais que de *ſortir,*	I *have but juſt* gone out.

N. B. This particle *de* is here indiſpenſible, becauſe, without it, the expreſſion would have quite another ſenſe, and would expreſs a continuation or a frequent reiteration in the action: ex.

Vous ne faites que *ſortir*,	You *do* nothing *but* go out.
Elle ne fait que *jouer et danſer*,	She *does* nothing *but* play and dance.

Preterite Anterior Definite.

This tenſe expreſſes an action paſt or done before acther which is likewiſe paſt; and it is for that reaſon it is called *anterior*. It is alſo named *definite*, not only for its being a compound of the preterite definite of the verb *avoir*, but becauſe it expreſſes an action done at a time determined by the following ſentence, which is the principal object of the attention. Thus, when we ſay,

Quand ils eurent achevé *de jouer, ils ſe mirent à chanter*,	When they *had done* playing, they began ſinging,

we mean at firſt to convey that they *began ſinging*, and then that it was not till they *had done playing*, in which caſe the action of having done playing is ſubordinate to this, *they began ſinging*, and conſequently the latter determines the time of the other.

The following obſervation is very plain, and will in ſome manner fix the uſe of the above tenſe, viz. that it is hardly ever uſed except after the conjunctions,

Auſſitôt que, *D'abord que*, *Dès que*,	As ſoon as;
Après que,	After;
Lorſque, *Quand*,	When;

which never precede a preterpluperfect, unleſs the verb expreſs a cuſtom or habit.

Laſtly, we muſt uſe the preterite anterior definite when the adverb, *bientôt*, ſoon, precedes or follows the verbs *was* or *had*, to expreſs an action or thing as done and accompliſhed: ex.

L'affaire fut bientôt *faite*,	The buſineſs was *ſoon* over.
J'eus bientôt *fini de manger*,	I *ſoon* had done eating.

Preterpluperfect.

The preterpluperfect expreſſes, as well as the above tenſe, an action paſt before another, which is paſt alſo, but with this difference, that the action expreſſed by this tenſe is the principal object of the perſon who ſpeaks, and the following ſentence is ſubordinate to that expreſſed by the preterpluperfect. So that, though the time of that ſubordinate ſentence be defined, that of the principal ſentence is not the leſs indeterminate, becauſe the former has no influence on the latter. As, when we ſay,

Nous avions diné *lorſqu'il arriva*,	We *had dined* when he arrived,

our principal object is to expreſs the action of dining as paſt, without determining at what time, but only before an action which is paſt alſo, without, however, the latter being a conſequence of the former; for, we do not mean to ſay, that he ſtayed, or waited, till we had dined, to arrive.

Future Past, or Compound.

The name of this tenſe ſeems at firſt to convey a contradiction: what is meant by that, is not that an action can be future and paſt at the ſame time, but only that the action, which is to come, will be paſt when another action happens, or even before it happens: ex.

Je ſerai parti *quand vous reviendrez*,	I *ſhall be gone* when you come back.
Quand vous aurez fini *vos affaires vous viendrez me trouver*,	When you *have done* your buſineſs you ſhall come to me.

In the firſt ſentence, *I ſhall be gone*, which is a future time with reſpect to the preſent we ſpeak in, will be a paſt time by the time you will or purpoſe to arrive, &c.

Conditional Past.

This tenſe generally ſuppoſes a condition, as the conditional preſent, with this difference, that, the condition taking place, the action expreſſed by the verb in the

conditional is accompliſhed, and conſequently in a paſt time: ex.

Je vous aurois écrit *il y a un mois ſi j'euſſe ſu votre adreſſe,*	I *would have written* to you a month ago if I had known your direction.

The *indicative* mood has another tenſe, formed by the preterite indefinite of the verb *avoir*, joined to a participle paſſive, which has not been inſerted in the preceding tenſes on account of its being ſeldom uſed: ex.

*Quand j'*ai eu diné, *je ſuis parti,*	When I *have had dined,* I ſet out.

But it is more elegant and more natural to ſay,

Après avoir diné, je ſuis parti,	After I had dined, I ſet out.

TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE, OR CONJUNCIVE, MOOD.

The ſubjunctive, or conjunctive, has no future diſtinguiſhed from the *preſent*, becauſe the preſent of the ſubjunctive likewiſe expreſſes a future tenſe: ex.

Je ne crois pas qu'il vienne,	I do not think he *will come.*

Add the following obſervations to the latter.

1°. When the verb which precedes the conjunction is in the preſent or future of the indicative, and when we do not mean to expreſs an action paſt in the ſecond verb, we muſt put this laſt verb in the preſent of the ſubjunctive mood: ex.

Je ſouhaite que vous réuſſiſſiez *dans votre entrepriſe,*	I wiſh you *may ſucceed* in your undertaking.
J'attendrai qu'il vienne,	I will wait till he *come.*

2°. When the verb, which is before the conjunction, is in ſome of the paſt tenſes, or conditional, and we wiſh not to deſign, by the ſecond verb, a paſt time more diſtant than the firſt verb's, we muſt put this ſecond verb in the imperfect of the ſubjunctive: ex.

*Alexandre ordonna que tous ſes ſujets l'*adoraſſent *comme un dieu,*	Alexander ordered that a his ſubjects *ſhould worſhip* him like a god.
Je voulois que vous écriviſſiez *à votre ſœur,*	I wiſhed you *to write* to your ſiſter.
Il ſouhaiteroit que vous priſſiez *des meſures plus convenables,*	He would wiſh you *to take* more becoming meaſures.

3°. The preterite of the ſubjunctive mood is uſed when we ſpeak of an action paſt and accompliſhed, with regard to the tenſe of the verb which precedes the conjunction; and this tenſe is generally the preſent, preterite indefinite, or future, of the indicative: ex.

Je doute qu'aucun philoſophe ait *jamais bien* connu *l'union de l'âme avec le corps,*	I doubt whether any philoſopher *have* ever well *known* the union of the ſoul with the body.
*Il a fallu que j'*aie conſulté *tous les médecins,*	I was obliged *to conſult* all the phyſicians.
*Je n'aurai garde d'y aller que je n'*aie reçu *quelque aſſurance d'être bien accuelli,*	I ſhall by no means go there till I *have received* ſome aſſurance of being welcome.

4°. After the imperfect, preterites, preterpluperfect, of the indicative, or one of the two conditionals, we uſe the preterpluperfect of the ſubjunctive mood; likewiſe after the conjunction *if*, when preceding a compound tenſe: ex.

J'ignorois que vous euſſiez embraſſé *cette profeſſion-là,*	I did not know you *had embraced* that profeſſion.
Vous n'avez pas cru que je fuſſe arrivé *avant vous,*	You did not believe I *ſhould have arrived* before you.
Nous aurions été fâches que vous vous fuſſiez adreſſé *à d'autres qu'à nous,*	We ſhould have been ſorry if you *had applied* to any other but us.

NUMBERS

NUMBERS AND PERSONS.

A tenſe is compoſed of numbers; that is, the ſingular and the plural.

That there are three perſons has already been obſerved under the perſonal pronouns; we have only to remark, that ſome of theſe three perſons are always joined to the verb as its nominative caſe, therefore the verb muſt agree with that nominative in number and perſon: ex.

Je fais,	I do.	*Nous faiſons,*	We do.
Tu fais,	Thou doſt.	*Vous faites,*	You *or* ye do.
Il fait,	He does.	*Ils font,*	They do.

The pronoun *vous*, you, denotes the ſecond perſon ſingular and plural with this difference, that, when we ſpeak to a perſon only, the attribute, or qualifying noun, muſt be put in the ſingular: ex.

Vous êtes marié, and not *mariés*,	You are married.
Vous étiez général de l'armée, and not *généraux*,	You were general of the army.

But we muſt ſay *mariés* and *généraux* if we ſpeak to many.

When the verb has two or three nouns or pronouns as its nominative it muſt be put in the plural, though all theſe nominatives be in the ſingular, becauſe two or more nouns in the ſingular are equivalent to a plural, with regard to verbs as well as to adjectives: ex.

Mon frere et ma ſœur ſont *partis*,	My brother and ſiſter *are* gone.

That has already been mentioned in the adjectives.

If, among theſe nominatives, one is of the firſt perſon and the other of the ſecond, or one is of the ſecond and the others of the third, the verb muſt agree with the firſt in preference to the ſecond, and with the ſecond in preference to the third: we muſt therefore ſay,

C'eſt vous et moi qui avons *découvert tout ce complot*,	It is you and I who *have* diſcovered all that plot.

Ce

Ce n'eſt ni vous ni ma ſœur qui avez *ouvert la porte*, It is neither you nor my ſiſter who *have* opened the door, &c.

The pronoun relative *qui*, in theſe and the like ſentences, always takes place of the firſt or ſecond perſon, and only agrees with the others in number: it is for that reaſon we muſt ſay,

C'eſt moi qui ſuis *cauſe de ce malheur*, It is I who *am* the cauſe of that misfortune;
C'eſt vous qui avez *révélé ce ſecret*, It is you who *have* revealed that ſecret;

and not *qui a*, who has, as ſome people ſpeak.

There are four conjugations in the French language, each is diſtinguiſhed by the termination of the verb in the infinitive mood.

The firſt makes	*er*,	as donn*er*, to give.
The ſecond	*ir*,	as pun*ir*, to puniſh.
The third	*evoir*,	as rec*evoir*, to receive.
The fourth	*re*	as rend*re*, to render.

N. B. It is neceſſary that the learner ſhould be well acquainted with the manner of conjugating the two following verbs, becauſe of the frequency of their occurrence in ſentences and in forming the compound tenſes of all other verbs.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB, *AVOIR*, TO HAVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent.	Preterite.
Avoir, to have.	*Avoir eu*, to have had.
Participle active.	Participle paſt.
Ayant, having.	*Ayant eu*, having had.
Participle paſſive.	
Eu, had.	

INDICA-

Indicative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.	Plural.
J'ai, I have.	*Nous avons*, we have.
Tu as, thou haſt.	*Vous avez*, you or ye have.
Il a, he has.	*Ils ont*, they have.
Elle a, ſhe has.	*Elles ont*, they have.

Imperfect. Sing.	Plural.
J'avois, I had.	*Nous avions*, we had.
Tu avois, thou hadſt.	*Vous aviez*, you had.
Il avoit, he had.	*Ils avoient*, they had.

Pret. defin. Sing.	Plural.
J'eus, I had.	*Nous eûmes*, we had.
Tu eus, thou hadſt.	*Vous eûtes*, you had.
Il eut, he had.	*Ils eurent*, they had.

Future. Singular.

J'aurai, I ſhall or will have.
Tu auras, thou wilt, &c. have.
Il aura, he will, &c. have.

Plural.

Nous aurons, we ſhall, &c. have.
Vous aurez, you will, &c. have.
Ils auront, they will, &c. have.

Conditional preſent. Singular.

J'aurois, I ſhould, could, would, or might, have.
Tu aurois, thou wouldeſt, &c. have.
Il auroit, he would, &c. have.

Plural.

Nous aurions, we ſhould, &c. have.
Vous auriez, you would, &c. have.
Ils auroient, they would, &c. have.

Compound Tenses.

They are formed by adding the participle paſſive, *eu*, had, to the preceding: ex.

Pret. indef.

J'ai eu, I have had, &c.

Pret.

Pret ant. def.

J'eus eu, I had had, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

J'avois eu, &c. I had had, &c.

Future paſt.

J'aurai eu, &c. I will or ſhall have had, &c.

Cond. paſt.

J'aurois eu, &c. I would, ſhould, could, or might, have had, &c.

Imperative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Aie, have thou.
Qu'il ait, let him have.
Qu'elle ait, let her have.

Plural.

Ayons, let us have.
Ayez, have ye or you.
Qu'ils or *elles aient*, let them have.

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Que j'aie, that I may have, or have.
tu aies, thou mayeſt have.
il ait, he may have.

Plural.

Que nous ayons, that we may have.
vous ayez, you may have.
ils aient, they may have.

Imperfect. Singular.

Que j'euſſe, that I might have, or had.
tu euſſes thou mighteſt have.
il eût, he might have.

Plural.

Que nous euſſions, that we might have.
vous euſſiez, you might have.
ils euſſent, they might have.

Compound Tenses.

They are formed by adding the participle paſſive, *eu*, had, to the two preceding; ex.

Preterite.

Preterite.

Que j'aie eu, &c. that I may have had.

Peterpluperfect.

Que j'euſſe eu, &c. that I might have had.

The learner ought to conjugate the preceding verb with a negation: ex.

Je n'*ai* pas, I have *not*;
Nous n'*avons* pas, We have *not*;

always placing *ne* before the verb and *pas* after it.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB, *ETRE*, TO BE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent
Etre, to be.

Preterite.
Avoir été, to have been.

Participle active.
Etant, being.

Participle paſt.
Ayant été, having been.

Participle paſſive.
Eté,

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Singular.
Je ſuis, I am.
Tu ès, thou art.
Il eſt, he is.

Plural.
Nous ſommes, we are.
Vous êtes, you are.
Ils ſont, they are.

Imperfect. Sing.
J'étois, I was.
Tu étois, thou waſt.
Il étoit, he was.

Plural.
Nous étions, we were.
Vous étiez, you were.
Ils étoient, they were.

Pret. defin. Sing.
Je fus, I was.
Tu fus, thou waſt.
Il fut, he was.

Plural.
Nous fûmes, we were.
Vous fûtes, you were.
Ils furent, they were.

Future. Singular.
Je ſerai, I ſhall or will be.
Tu ſeras, thou wilt, &c. be
Il ſera, he will, &c. be.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous ſerons, we ſhall, &c. be.
Vous ſerez, you will, &c. be.
Ils ſeront, they will, &c. be.

Conditional preſent. Singular.

Je ſerois, I would, could, ſhould, or might, be.
Tu ſerois, thou wouldeſt, &c. be.
Il ſeroit, he would, &c. be.

Plural.

Nous ſerions, we ſhould, &c. be.
Vous ſeriez, you would, &c. be.
Ils ſeroient, they would, &c. be.

Compound Tenses.

They are formed by adding the participle paſſive of this verb, *été*, been, to the ſimple tenſes of the indicative mood of the verb *avoir*: ex.

Pret. indef.

J'ai été, &c. I have been, &c.

Pret. anterior definite.

J'eus été, &c. I had been, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

J'avois été, &c. I had been, &c.

Future paſt.

J'aurai été, &c. I ſhall or will have been, &c.

Conditional paſt.

J'aurois été, &c. I ſhould, could, would, or might, have been, &c.

Imperative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Sois, be thou.
Qu'il ſoit, let him be.

Plural.

Soyons, let us be.
Soyez, be ye.
Qu'ils ſoient, let them be.

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Que je ſois, that I may be, or be.
tu ſois, thou mayeſt be.
il ſoit, he may be.

Plural.

Que nous ſoyons, that we may be.
vous ſoyez, you may be.
ils ſoient, they may be.

Imperfect. Singular.

Que je fuſſe, that I might be, or were.
tu fuſſes, thou mighteſt be.
Il fût, he might be.

Plural.

Que nous fuſſions, that we might be.
vous fuſſiez, you might be.
ils fuſſent, they might be.

Compound Tenses.

They are formed by adding the participle paſt of this verb *été*, been, to the two ſimple tenſes of the ſubjunctive mood of the verb *avoir*: ex.

Preterite.

Que j'aie été, that I may have been, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Que j'euſſe été, &c. that I might have been, &c.

This verb, as well as the preceding, is to be conjugated with the negation: ex.

Je ne *ſuis* pas, I am *not*.
Nous ne *ſommes* pas, We are *not*.

EXERCISES upon the two auxiliary VERBS.

GENERAL OBSERVATION.

Every verb muſt agree with its nominative caſe in *perſon* and *number*; but, after collective nouns, ſuch as

amas,

amas, *foule*, *infinité*, *nombre*, *la plûpart*, &c. followed by a genitive, the verb muſt agree with that genitive in number: ex.

La plûpart de ſes amis *l'ont* *abandonné*, — Moſt of his *friends* have forſaken him.

In order to eaſe the learners, the different ſimple tenſes are marked in the following exerciſes, as far as the irregular verbs, when it is hoped every difficulty will be removed by practice and attention. The ſecond perſon ſingular, being ſeldom or never uſed in converſation, has been omitted throughout the exerciſes on the verbs.

Indicative Mood.

Pres. I have a book. — I am happy. —— He has
livre, m. *heureux*, adj.
a hat, which is too big. —— We have no
chapeau, m. *trop*, adv. *grand*, adj.
money. —— We are not ambitious. —— You have a
argent, m. *ambitieux*, adj.
ſword. —— You are very proud. —— Thoſe girls
épée, f. *orgueilleux*, adj. *fille*, f.
have modeſty; they are virtuous.
modeſtie, f. *vertueux*, adj.

Imp. I had a friend. — I was grateful. —— My
ami, m. *reconnoiſſant*, adj.
ſiſter had no work, ſhe was lazy. —— We had
ouvrage, m. *pareſſeux*, adj.
a holiday, we were very glad of it. — You had
congé, m. *aiſe*, adj.
company, but you were not ready. — Your
compagnie, f. *mais*, c. *prêt*, adj.
had learning, they were loved by every body.
ſavoir, m. *aimé*, p.p. *de*

PRET. (As ſoon as) I had a fine — horſe I
Dès que, c. *beau*, adj. *cheval*, m.
was merry. —— My couſin had a little gar-
de bonne humeur. *couſin*, m. *petit*, adj. *jar-*
den, he was ingenious. — As ſoon as we had bread
din, m. *adroit*, adj. *pain*, m.
we were ſatisfied. —— You had fine weather, you were
raſſaſſié, p.p. *tems*, m.
pleaſed. —— Your friends had beautiful flowers, they
content, adj. *beau*, adj. *fleur*, f.
were very careful of them.
ſoigneux, adj.

FUT. I ſhall have diſcretion; I ſhall be prudent.

— Miſs White ſhall have a bird that will be very
oiſeau, m.
tame. —— We ſhall have no books; we ſhall not
apprivoiſé, adj.
be learned. — You ſhall have pens and paper; you
ſavant, adj. *plume*, f. *papier*, m.
will be buſy. —— The Engliſh will have a good ad-
occupé, adj. *a-*
miral; they will be victorious.
miral, m. *victorieux*, adj.

COND. PRE. I could have a pretty dog. —— I
joli, adj. *chien*, m.
would not be troubleſome. — Mr. Thomas would have
importun, adj.
good wine; it would be a delicious thing. — We
vin, m. *ce* *délicieux*, adj. *choſe*, f.
would have a dictionary; we would not be negligent.
dictionnaire, m.
— You would have good officers; you would be in-
officier, m. *in-*
vincible.

vincible. —— Theſe ladies ſhould have a better re-
vincible, adj. *dame*, f. *ac-*

ception; they would be thankful.
cueil, m. *reconnoiſſant*, adj.

Imperative Mood.

Have patience, and be indulgent. — Let her have a

gown; let her be happy. — Let us have at leaſt
robe, f. *au moins*, adv.

ſome gratitude; let us be diligent. — Let them have
reconnoiſſance, f.

partridges; let them be merry.
perdrix, f. *joyeux*, adj.

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. That I may have riches. —— That I may
richeſſes, f. pl.

be charitable. — That he may have ſcholars. — That
écolier, m.

he may be attentive. —— That we may have a good
attentif, adj.

houſe. —— That we may be well lodged. — That
maiſon, f. *bien*, adv. *logé*, p.p.

you may have your money; that you may be paid. —
argent, m. *payé*, p.p.

That they may have apples; that they may be ripe.
pomme, f. *mûr*, adj.

Imp. That I might have generoſity. —— That I
généroſité, f.

might not be poor. —— That he might have
pauvre, adj.

ſure. — That he might be uneaſy. —— That we
ſir, m. *inquiet*, adj.

have our ſhare. — That we might not be deceived. —
part, f. *trompé*, p.p.

That you might have a couple of fowls. —— That you
couple, f. *poulet*, m.

might be pleaſed. —— That they might have no pen-
content, adj.

ſion. — That they might not be rewarded.
récompenſé, p.p.

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES UPON THE COMPOUND TENSES.

I have had (a great deal) of trouble; I have not
bien, adv. *peine*, f.

been rewarded. —— Your brother would have had
frere, m.

leave if he had been diligent. — If you had mar-
permiſſion, f. *épou-*

ried him, you would have had a tyrant inſtead
ſé, p.p. *tyran*, m. *au lieu*, p.

of a huſband; you never could have been happy. —
mari, m. *ne jamais*

If we had fought we could not have been con-
combattu, p.p. *vain-*

quered. — Thomas has had two holidays becauſe he
cu, p.p. *congé*, m. *parceque*, c.

has been very active. — Your friend could have had a
actif, adj.

better watch, he would not have been cheated. — Your
montre, f. *trompé*, p.p.

and my brother have been wet. —— You could
mouillé, p.p.

have killed a hare if you had had a gun.
tué, p.p. *lievre*, m. *ſi*, c. *fuſil*, m.

After

After theſe exerciſes, the learner ought to conjugate the two foregoing verbs, throughout the ſeveral tenſes of the indicative mood only, firſt, with an interrogation affirmative, and then with an interrogation negative: ex.

SINGULAR.

Affirmatively.

Ai-je? have I? *Suis-je?* am I?
A-t-il? has he? *Eſt-il?* is he?
Mon frere a-t-il? has my brother?
Sa fille eſt-elle? is her daughter.

Negatively.

N'ai-je-pas? have I not? *Ne ſuis-je pas?* am I not?
N'a-t-il pas? has he not? *N'eſt-il pas?* is he not?
Ma ſœur n'a-t-elle pas? has not my ſiſter?
Votre couſin n'eſt-il pas? is not your couſin?

PLURAL.

Affirmatively.

Avons-nous? have we? *Sommes-nous?* are we?
Avez-vous? have you? *Etes-vous?* are you?
Ont-ils? have they? *Sont-ils?* are they?
Vos freres ont-ils? have your brothers? &c.
Ses filles ſont-elles? are his daughters? &c.

Negatively.

N'avons-nous pas? have we not?
N'avez-vous pas? have you not?
N'ont il pas? have they not?
Ses enfans n'ont-ils pas? have not his children?
Ne ſommes-nous pas? are we not?
N'êtes-vous pas? are you not?
Ne ſont-ils pas? are they not?
Mes ſœurs ne ſont-elles pas? are not my ſiſters? &c.

N. B. In the interrogations, it muſt be obſerved that, when there is a noun, ſtanding as a nominative to the verb, the pronouns, *il*, *elle*, *nous*, *vous*, *ils*, *elles*, though not expreſſed in Engliſh, muſt be expreſſed in French immediately after the verb, according to the perſon and number; and, when the verb terminates with

with a vowel, a *-t-* is to be added, in the third perſon ſingular, between the verb and the pronoun, the noun beginning the phraſe: ex.

Votre oncle a-t-il *des enfans?* Has your uncle any children?

that is, your uncle, has *he* any children?

Mon couſin aura-t-il *congé?* Will my couſin have a holiday?

that is, my couſin, will *he* have a holiday?

The ſame rule muſt be obſerved in the conjugation of the other verbs: ex.

Votre frere joue-t-il *du violon?* Does your brother play on the fiddle?

Sa ſœur dinera-t-elle *ici aujourd'hui?* Will her ſiſter dine here to-day? &c.

But, if the ſentence begin with *que*, interrogative, or an *adverb*, the pronoun is not to be expreſſed, and the *noun* is to be put after the verb: ex.

Que *fait votre ſœur?* *What* is your ſiſter doing?

Comment *ſe porte votre frere?* *How* does your brother?

The learner will have no trouble in going through the other ſimple tenſes of the indicative mood; and, as for the compounds, it needs only to be remarked, that *eu*, had, or *été*, been, is to be added to the ſimple tenſes of the verb *avoir*, to have: ex.

Ai-je eu? have I *had?*
N'ai-je pas eu? have I not *had?* &c.
Ai-je été? have I *been?*
N'ai-je pas été? have I not *been?* &c.

EXERCISES ON THE PRECEDING RULES.

Have I my books? — Am I not unhappy to

malheureux, adj. *de*

have

have loſt his friendſhip? — Has he no money? —
perdu, p.p. *amitié*, f.

Is my ſiſter arrived? —— Has not your father a great
arrivé, p.p.

deal of friendſhip for you? —— Have not your parents
amitié, f.

ſent you all the money you wanted? —— Have
envoyé, p.p. *avoir*, v. *beſoin de*

we not a garden? — Are we not very happy? — Have
jardin, m.

you a good gun? — Are you dexterous? — Have not
fuſil, m. *adroit*, adj.

my brother and ſiſter a beautiful coach? —— Are not
caroſſe, m.

Paul and Thomas two pretty children? — Are your
joli, adj.

brothers arrived? — Are you not glad to ſee them?
de voir, v.

— Have they ſpoken to you? — Had you not a little
parlé, p p.

dog? — Was not your paper very good? — Are not

the Engliſh ladies generally handſomer than the
généralement, adv.

French? — Shall you have occaſion for your dictiona-
beſoin, m. *de*

ry? — Shall I not have the pleaſure to ſee you to-
de voir, v. *de-*

morrow? — Were you not in the room? — Shall we
main, adv. *chambre*, f.

not have leave? —— Will they not be angry?
permiſſion, f. *fâché*, adj.

Could you not have had a better watch? — If France
Si, c.

were

were as rich as England, would it not be the
riche, adj. *ce*, pro.

beſt country in* the world? — Will you not be aſha-
pays, m. *hon-*

med? —— Has not your friend had bad weather?
teux, adj. *mauvais*, adj. *tems*, m.

— Had not our admiral better ſeamen than yours? —
matelot, m.

Has he been victorious? — Would not your hat be too
victorieux, adj.

big? —— Is not your ſiſter older than mine? ——
grand, adj, *agé*, adj.

Are you not happier than if you were married? ——
marié, p.p.

Shall not John have a holiday if he be diligent? ——
Jean

Has not your couſin more money than you? —— Was
not your wine very dear?

The learner will ſoon be convinced how neceſſary it is to know theſe two verbs perfectly well, becauſe the compound tenſes of all the others are formed with them. When he is well acquainted with their uſage, he will only have to add the participle paſſive to any of their tenſes: ex.

J'ai aimé, I have loved, or, did love.
Je n'ai pas chanté, I have not ſung, or, I did not ſing.
Ai-je parlé? have I ſpoken? or, did I ſpeak?
N'ai-je pas étudié? have I not ſtudied? or, did I not ſtudy?
Avez vous danſé? have you danced? or, did you dance?
N'avez-vous pas écrit? have you not written? or, did you not write?
Je ſuis puni, I am puniſhed.
Je ne ſuis pas attendu, I am not expected.

Suis-

* See the degrees of compariſon.

Suis-je aimé? am I loved?
Ne ſuis-je pas perdu? am I not undone?
Etes-vous marié? are you married?
N'êtes-vous pas convaincu? are you not convinced?

REMARK ON THE VERB *ETRE*, TO BE.

In Engliſh, when this verb immediately precedes any noun, ſignifying *old*, *hungry*, *thirſty*, *cold*, *hot*, or *afraid*, it ſhould be rendered into French by *avoir*, to have, and the adjective muſt be changed into its ſubſtantive: ex.

Quel age avez-*vous?*	How *old are* you?
J'ai ſept ans,	I *am* ſeven years old.
Avez-*vous* faim?	*Are* you *hungry?*
Non, mais j'ai ſoif,	No, but I *am thirſty*, &c.

EXERCISES.

How old is your daughter? — She is ſeven years
Quel, pro. *fille*, f. *an*, m.
old. —— My ſon will be eleven years old (in the)
fils, m. *au*
month of April. — I was very hungry when I
mois, m. *Avril*, m. *grand*, adj. *quand*, c.
arrived. —— Were you not very thirſty? — He is
ſuis arrivé, v. *grand*, adj.
not afraid. —— You will ſoon be warm. —— Are
peur, f. *bientôt*, adv. *chaud*, m.
you not cold? —— How old are theſe two young chil-
froid, m. *en-*
dren? —— The one is three years old, and the other is
fant, m.
not yet four. —— Was not my ſiſter more than
encore, adv.
ten years old when ſhe died?
quand, adv. *mourut*, v.

FIRST

FIRST CONJUGATION.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent.	Parl-*er*, to ſpeak.
Participle active.	**ant*, ſpeaking.
Participle paſſive.	*é*, m. *ée*, f. ſpoken.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Preterite.	*Avoir parlé*, to have ſpoken.
Part. paſt.	*Ayant parlé*, having ſpoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Singular.

Je parl-*e*, I ſpeak, or, I do ſpeak, or, am ſpeaking.†
Tu *es*, thou ſpeakeſt.
Il *e*, he ſpeaks.

Plural.

Nous **ons*, we ſpeak.
Vous *ez*, you ſpeak.
Ils *ent*, they ſpeak.

Imperfect. Singular.

Je parl-**ois*, I was ſpeaking, ſpoke, or, did ſpeak.
Tu **ois*, thou waſt ſpeaking, &c.
Il **oit*, he was ſpeaking, &c.

Plural.

Nous *ions*, we were ſpeaking, &c.
Vous *iez*, you were ſpeaking, &c.
Ils **oient*, they were ſpeaking, &c.

Preterite. Singular.

Je parl-**ai*, I ſpoke, or, did ſpeak.
Tu **as*, thou ſpokeſt.
Il **a*, he ſpoke.

† When in Engliſh a participle active is joined to any of the tenſes of the auxiliary verb, *to be*, the auxiliary muſt be left out, in French, and the participle put in the ſame tenſe, &c. with the auxiliary that is ſuppreſſed: ex.

Je parle, I *am* ſpeaking; *Je priois*, I *was* deſiring;
Vous parlez, you *are* ſpeaking; *Nous chantions*, we *were* ſinging;
and not *je* ſuis *parlant*, *vous* êtes *parlant*, *j'*étois *priant*, &c.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous parl-**âmes*, we ſpoke.
Vous **âtes*, you ſpoke.
Ils *erent*, they ſpoke.

Future. Singular.

Je parl-*erai*, I ſhall, or will, ſpeak.
Tu *eras*, thou ſhalt, or wilt, ſpeak.
Il *era*, he ſhall, or will, ſpeak.

Plural.

Nous *erons*, we ſhall, or will, ſpeak.
Vous *erez*, you ſhall, or will, ſpeak.
Ils *eront*, they ſhall, or will, ſpeak.

Conditional preſent. Singular.

Je parl-*erois*, I ſhould, would, could, or might, ſpeak.
Tu *erois*, thou ſhouldeſt, &c. ſpeak.
Il *eroit*, he ſhould, &c. ſpeak.

Plural.

Nous *erions*, we ſhould, &c. ſpeak.
Vous *eriez*, you ſhould, &c. ſpeak.
Ils *eroient*, they ſhould, &c. ſpeak.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Pret. indefinite. *J'ai parlé*, I have ſpoken.
Pret. ant. definit. *J'eus parlé*, I had ſpoken.
Preterpluperfect. *J'avois parlé*, I had ſpoken.
Future paſt. *J'aurai parlé*, I ſhall, or will, have ſpoken.
Conditional paſt. *J'aurois parlé*, I ſhould, would, could, have ſpoken.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Singular.

Parl-*e*, ſpeak thou.
Qu'il *e*, let him ſpeak.

Plural.

**ons*, let us ſpeak.
ez, ſpeak ye.
Qu'il *ent*, let them ſpeak.

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Que je parl-*e*, that I may ſpeak or I ſpeak.
tu *es*, thou mayeſt ſpeak.
il *e*, he may ſpeak.

Plural.

nous *ions*, that we may ſpeak.
vous *iez*, you may ſpeak.
ils *ent*, they may ſpeak.

Imperfect. Singular.

Que je parl-**aſſe*, that I might ſpeak, or, I ſpoke
tu **aſſes*, thou mighteſt ſpeak.
il **ât*, he might ſpeak.

Plural.

nous **aſſions*, that we might ſpeak.
vous **aſſiez*, you might ſpeak.
ils **aſſent*, they might ſpeak.

Compound Tenses.

Preterite. *Que j'aie parlé*, that I may have ſpoken.
Preterpluper. *Que j'euſſe parlé*, that I might have ſpoken.

After the ſame manner are conjugated about 2700 regular verbs; the following are excepted: viz.

Aller, being very irregular, will be ſeen among the irregular verbs.

Envoyer is only irregular in the future and conditional preſent; as, inſtead of ſaying, *j'envoyerai*, I will ſend, &c. *j'envoyerois*, I would ſend, &c. according to the conjugation; we ſay,

Future.

Singular.	Plural.
J'enverrai, I will ſend.	*Nous enverrons.*
Tu enverras.	*Vous enverrez.*
Il enverra.	*Ils enverront.*

Conditional

* Verbs of this conjugation, whoſe radix terminates in G or C, immediately ſucceeded by A or O, require, for the ſoftening of their ſounds, that an E be added to the G, and a cerilla to the Ç. Little ſtars are placed where theſe alterations are required.

Conditional preſent.

Singular.	Plural.
J'enverrois, I would ſend.	*Nous enverrions.*
Tu enverrois.	*Vous enverriez.*
Il enverroit.	*Ils enverroient.*

Puer is only irregular in the three perſons of the preſent tenſe of the indicative mood; as, *je pus, tu pus, il put*, inſtead of, *je pue*, &c. This verb is ſeldom uſed, for we ſay, *ſentir mauvais* inſtead of *puer*.

N. B. The following verbs, *aboyer*, to bark, *eſſuyer*, to wipe, *employer*, to employ, *nettoyer*, to clean, *ennuyer*, to tire, to be tireſome, *noyer*, to drown, and a few others, change the Y into I, where the letter *y* is immediately ſucceeded by an *e* mute: ex. *j'emploie, tu emploies, il emploie; nous employons, vous employez, ils emploient*, &c.

The learner, having conjugated a verb *affirmatively* and *negatively*, ought to conjugate two others, with an *interrogation affirmative* and *negative*, in the indicative mood only, and ſo on through the other conjugations, before he makes the exerciſes: ex.

Affirmatively.

Manges-tu? doſt thou eat?
Mange-t-il? does he eat?
Parlons-nous? do we ſpeak? &c.

Negatively.

Ne parlé-je pas? do I not ſpeak?
Ma ſœur ne chante-t-elle pas? does not my ſiſter ſing?

N. B. In many verbs, the common uſage does not admit an interrogation in the firſt perſon ſingular, preſent, of the indicative mood.—Inſtead of ſaying, *Mangé-je?* Do I eat? *Punis-je?* Do I puniſh, &c. we ſay, Eſt-ce que *je mange?* Eſt-ce que *je punis?* &c.

Some verbs, ending in *e* mute, in the firſt perſon ſingular, preſent, of the indicative mood, change the *e* mute into an *é* with an acute accent, and *je* after it; as it is ſeen by *parlé-je*.

It has before been obſerved, that the compound tenſes are eaſily formed, by adding the participle paſſive of the verb to any of the tenſes of the auxiliaries, *avoir*, to have, or *être*, to be, as they have been conjugated, either affirmatively, negatively, or interrogatively: ex.

Affirmatively.

J'ai danſé, I have danced, or, I did dance.

Negatively.

Je n'ai pas parlé, I have not ſpoken, or, I did not ſpeak.

Interrogatively affirmatively.

Avez-vous chanté? Have you ſung? or, Did you ſing?

Interrogatively negatively.

N'a-t-il pas mangé? Has he not eaten? or, Did he not eat?

Obſerve that we make uſe of

Mener, To take, to carry,
Amener, To bring,
Emmener, To carry, to take away,

and all the compound verbs of *mener*, whenever we ſpeak of rational or irrational beings to which nature has given the faculty of walking, or has not deprived them from it through illneſs or accident: in all other caſes we make uſe of

Porter, To carry,
Apporter, To bring,
Emporter, To carry or take away,

and all the compounds of *porter*.

EXERCISES ON THIS CONJUGATION.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRES. I play ſometimes but I never
jou-er, v. *quelquefois*, adv. *mais*, c. *ne jamais*, adv.
win. ——How much does your brother give
gagn-er, v. *Combien*, adv. *donn-er*, v.
for his board?—We do not command; we pray.—
penſion, f. *command-er*, v. *pri-er*, v.

You

You always borrow; you never lend. — You
toujours, adv. *emprunt-er*, v. *prêt-er*, v.
are always ſpeaking when I write. — Why
quand, adv. *écris*, v. *Pourquoi*, adv.
do you not grant him that favour? — What do
accord-er, v. *grace*, f.
they aſk you?
demand-er, v.

IMP. I was deſiring them to ſing a ſong. —
pri-er, v. *de chant-er*, v. *chanſon*, f.
She was not ſpeaking to you. — Were we not joking? —
badin-er, v.
Were you not ſcolding them when I came? — They
grond-er, v. *vins*, v.
were eating fiſh.
mang-er, v. *poiſſon*, m.

PRET. I ſpoke to them (a long while). — Did not
long tems, adv.
the king forgive them? — We wept for joy
roi, m. *pardonn-er*, v. *pleur-er*, v. *de joie*, f.
when we found her. — Why did you not play on
trouv-er, v.
Friday laſt. —— They faſtened the man to a
Vendredi, m. *dernier*, adj. *li-er*, v.
tree, knocked him down, and then robbed
arbre, m. *aſſomm-er*, v. *enſuite*, adv. *vo-ler*, v.
him of his watch, gold ring, and all the money he
montre, f. *bague*, f.
had in his pocket.
poche, f.

FUT. I will buy a watch the firſt time I
achet-er, v. *fois*, f.
go to London. — Will not your father ſend
irai, v. *envoy-er*, v.

you to ſchool this winter?—What ſhall we give him?
école,f. *hiver*,m.

—Will you not carry the children to the play?—
men-er,v. *enfant*,m. *comédie*,f.

They will empty the bottle if you do not take
vid-er,v. *bouteille*,f. *emport-er*,v

it away.

COND. PRE. I would lend them money if they
prêt-er,v.

were not ſo idle. —— Would not your mother de-
pareſſeux,adj. *mé-*

ſpiſe ſuch a conduct?—Why ſhould we ſend
priſ-er,v. *tel*,adj. *conduite*,f.

them there?—I am ſure you would marry her
ſûr,adj. *épouſ-er*,v.

if ſhe were rich. —Would they not pay us if they
riche,adj. *pay-er*,v.

had money?

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Bridle my horſe, and bring him to me.—
Brid-er,v. *cheval*,m. *amen-er*,v.

Give a chair to that lady. —Let her not (come up,)
chaiſe,f. *dame*,f. *mont-er*,v.

for I am engaged. —Let us carry thoſe peaches to Mrs.
engagé,p.p. *pêche*,f.

D——. —Do not neglect your affairs.—Let them
néglig-er,v. *affaire*,f.

hunt.
chaſſ-er,v.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRES. That I may help you. —Though‡ he
aid-er,v *Quoique*,c.

do

‡ Conjunctions which require the ſubjunctive mood.

do not approve of my plan. — Provided‡ we
approuv-er,v. *plan*,m. *Pourvûque*,c.

avoid their company. — That you may try
évit-er,v. *compagnie*,f. *éprouver*,v.

that gun.——That they may not command.
fuſil,m.

IMP. That I might change my opinion.—That
chang-er,v. *opinion*,f.

he might eat an apple. — That we might not fall
pomme,f. *tomb-er*,v.

into their hands.—That you might encourage the
dans,p. *main*,f. *encourag-er*,v.

induſtrious. — That they might exerciſe their ta-
induſtrieux,adj. *exere-er*, v. *ta-*

lents.
lent,m.

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE COMPOUND TENSES.

I have forgotten to bring your penknife. — He
oubli-er,v. *de apport-er*,v. *canif*,m

has not yet ſpoken to us. — Has ſhe brought her
encore,adv.

work with her?—Have we not gained our cauſe?—
gagn-er,v.

Why have you not yet begun your exerciſe?—
commenc-er,v. *thême*,f.

You had taken the muſtard away.—You would
emport-er,v. *moutarde*,f.

have judged more favourably of him. — Stay
juger,v. *favorablement*,adv. *Reſt-er*,v.

here till‡ we have dined. —Could we not
ici,adv. *juſqu'à ce que*,c. *din-er*,v.

have aſſiſted that family? — They have broken their
aid-er,v. *famille*,f. *caſſ-er*,v.

windows,

windows, becauſe they had not illuminated as
fenêtre,f. *parceque*,c. *illumin-er*,v. *comme*,adv.

it had been ordered. — I ſhall have dined ſoon. ——
ordonn-er,v. *bientôt*,adv.

We would have ſent them to priſon if they had
envoy-er,v. *en priſon*,f.

reſiſted——That we may have denied the fact.——
reſiſter,v. *ni-er*,v. *fait*,m.

Had you not imitated their manners?—They had not
imit-er,v. *maniere*,f.

executed his commands. — Had I not lighted
exécut-er,v. *commandement*,m. *allumer*,v.

the fire? — They would have carried him to the con-
feu,m.

cert if I had not hindered them (from it.) — We
empêch-er,v.

might have accepted of his offers.
accept-er,v. *offre*,f.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent. Pun-*ir*, to puniſh.
Participle active. *iſſant*, puniſhing.
Participle paſſive. *i*, m. *ie*, f. puniſhed.

Compound Tenses.

Preterite. *Avoir puni*, to have puniſhed.
Part. paſt. *Ayant puni*, having puniſhed.

Indicative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Je pun-*is*, I puniſh, I do puniſh, or I am puniſhing.
Tu *is*.
Il *it*.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous pun-*issons*, we puniſh, &c.
Vous *issez*.
Ils *issent*.

Imperfect. Singular.

Je pun-*issois*, I did puniſh, or I was puniſhing,
Tu *issois*.
Il *issoit*.

Plural.

Nous *issions*, we did puniſh, &c.
Vous *issiez*.
Ils *issoient*.

Preterite. Singular.

Je pun-*is*, I puniſhed, or did I puniſh.
Tu *is*.
Il *it*.

Plural.

Nous *îmes*, we puniſhed, &c.
Vous *îtes*.
Ils *îrent*.

Future. Singular.

Je pun-*irai*, I ſhall or will puniſh.
Tu *iras*.
Il *ira*.

Plural.

Nous *irons*, we ſhall or will puniſh.
Vous *irez*.
Ils *iront*.

Conditional preſent. Singular.

Je pun-*irois*, I ſhould, would, could, or might, puniſh.
Tu *irois*.
Il *iroit*.

Plural

Nous *irions*, we ſhould, &c. puniſh.
Vous *iriez*.
Il *iroient*.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Pret. indefin. *J'ai puni*, I have puniſhed.

Pret.

Pret. ant. def. *J'eus puni*, I had puniſhed.
Peterpluperf. *J'avois puni*, I had puniſhed.
Future paſt. *J'aurai puni*, I ſhall, &c. have puniſhed.
Cond. paſt. *J'aurois puni*, I ſhould, &c. have puniſhed.

Imperative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.
Pun-*is*, puniſh thou.
Qu'il *iſſe*, let him puniſh.
Plural.
iſſons, let us puniſh.
iſſez, puniſh ye.
Qu'ils *iſſent*, let them puniſh.

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent. Singular.
Que je pun-*iſſe*, that I may puniſh, or I puniſh.
tu *iſſes*.
il *iſſe*.
Plural.
nous *iſſions*, that we may puniſh.
vous *iſſiez*.
ils *iſſent*.

Imperfect. Singular.
Que je pun-*iſſe*, that I might puniſh, or I puniſhed.
tu *iſſes*.
il *it*.
Plural.
nous *iſſions*, that we might puniſh.
vous *iſſiez*.
ils *iſſent*.

Compound Tenses.

Preterite. *Que j'aie puni*, that I may have puniſhed.
Preterplu. *Que j'euſſe puni*, that I might have puniſhed.

After the ſame manner are conjugated about 200 regular verbs; the following are excepted, as being irregular.

Acquérir,

Acquérir, to acquire.
Assaillir, to assault.
Bouillir, to boil.
Courir, to run.
Cueillir, to gather.
Dormir, to sleep.
Faillir, to fail.
Fuir, to fly, to avoid.
Mentir, to lie.
Mourir, to die.
Offrir, to offer.
Ouvrir, to open.
Partir, to set out.
Se repentir, to repent.
Sentir, to smell.
Servir, to serve.
Sortir, to go out.
Souffrir, to suffer.
Tenir, to hold.
Venir, to come.
Vêtir, to clothe.
And their compounds.

EXERCISES UPON THIS CONJUGATION.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRES. I always finish my work before
toujours, adv *fin-ir*, v. *ouvrage*, m. *avant*, p.
the others.—Your friend does not succeed in his
ami, m. *réuss-ir*, v. *dans*, p.
undertaking.—Do we not furnish arms against
entrepriſe, f. *fourn-ir*, v. *arme*, f. *contre*, p.
ourselves?—Why do you hate him?—They
hair, v.
cure, the diseases of the body and not those of
guér-ir, v. *maladie*, f. *corps*, m.
the mind.
esprit, m.

IMP. I was building my house when you de-
bât-ir, v. *maiſon*, f. *quand*, adv. *dé-*
molished yours.—Was he not enjoying a good
mol-ir, v. *jou-ir de*, v.
estate?—We hated him, because he did not act kind-
bien, m. *parceque*, c. *ag-ir*, v. *hon-*
ly towards us.—On what were you re-
nêtement, adv. *envers*, p. *Sur*, p. *ré-*
flecting?

flecting? — The mountains were resounding with
flech-ir,v. *montagne*,f. *retent-ir*,v. *de*
their cries.
cri,m.

PRET. I warranted them very good.—Did your
garant-ir.v.
master accomplish his promise?—We (leaped over)
maître,m.*accompl-ir*,v. *promesse*,f. *franch-ir*,v.
the ditch, and seized the guilty. — Why did you not
fosse,m. *saisi-ir*,v. *coupable*,adj.
applaud that pretty actress?—Did not the soldiers
applaud-ir,v. *joli*,adj. *actrice*,f. *soldat*,m.
obey the commands of their general?
obé-ir,v. *à commandement*,m.

FUT. When shall I banish all these thoughts
bann-ir,v.*tout*,adj. *pensée*,f.
from my mind?—This plant will soon blossom if you
plante,f. *fleur-ir*,v.
water it often. — We shall warn your relations
arroser,v. *souvent*,adv. *avert-ir*,v. *parent*,m.
of it. — Shall you not enjoy, as we do, the
comme,adv.
pure pleasures of the country?—Her children will
pur,adj.
bless her for it.
bén-ir,v.

COND. PRE. I would choose this cloth, if I were
choisi-ir,v. *drap*,m.
in your place. — Would he not blush if he acted
roug-ir,v.
so? —— We would not punish them if they were
ainsi,adv. *pun-ir*,v.
diligent. — Would you not act with less seve-
avec,p.*moins*,adv. *sévé-*
rity?

rity? — They could furniſh us with arms and troops
rité, f. *troupe*, f.

if we wanted any.
avoir beſoin

Imperative Mood.

Do not fill the glaſſes. —— Let him enjoy the
rempl-ir, v. *verre*, m.

fruit of his labours. — Let us reflect on what we have
travail, m.

to do. —— Let them define the queſtion.
à faire, v. *défin-ir*, v.

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. That I may not periſh. —— I wiſh he
pér-ir, v. *ſouhaiter*, v.

may ſucceed. — That we may not (bear hardſhips.) —
réuſſ-ir, v. *pât-ir*, v.

That you may not hate us. —— Provided they do not

(grow tall.)
grand-ir, v.

Imp. That I might refreſh my memory. —
rafraich-ir, v. *mémoire*, f.

That ſhe might not roaſt the meat. —— That we
rôt-ir, v.

might (become younger.) —— That you might puniſh
rajeun-ir, v.

the idle. — That they might not (grow old.)
vieill-ir, v.

Compound Tenses.

I have filled my cellar with good wine. — Has
rempl-ir, v. *cave*, f. *de*

he not leaped over the ditch? — We had finiſhed our
foſſé, m.

work. —— They would have ſeized him. —— We
ouvrage,m.

ſhould have periſhed without any aſſiſtance. —— When
ſans, p. *ſecours*, m.

ſhall I have built my houſe? — I have (very much)
bât-ir,v. *beaucoup*,adv.

weakened his courage. — Though they have adorn-
affoibl-ir, v. *Quoique*, c. *em-*

ed their gardens to dazzle the vulgar, they
bell-ir,v. *jardin*,m. *pour éblou-ir*,v. *vulgaire*,m.

have not ſucceeded, becauſe they have diſobeyed
parceque,c. *deſobé-ir*,v.*à*

their father and mother.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent. Rec-*evoir*, to receive.
Part. active. *evant*, receiving.
Part. paſſive. **u*, m. *ue*, f. received.

Compound Tenses.

Preterite. *Avoir reçu*, to have received.
Part. paſt. *Ayant reçu*, having received.

Indicative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Jo reç-*ois*, I receive, I do receive, or I am receiving.
Tu *ois*.
Il *oit*.

Plural.

Nous *evons*, we receive, &c.
Vous *evez*.
Ils *oivent*.

* Verbs of this conjugation, whoſe radix terminates in c, require, for the ſoftening of their ſound, that a cerilla be added to the (ç) whenever it is followed by o or u.

Imperfect.

Imperfect. Singular.

Je rec-*evois*, I did receive, or was receiving.
Tu *evois*.
Il *evoit*.

Plural.

Nous *evions*, we did receive, &c.
Vous *eviez*.
Ils *evoient*.

Preterite. Singular.

Je reç-*us*, I received, or I did receive.
Tu *us*.
Il *ut*.

Plural.

Nous *ûmes*, we received, &c.
Vous *ûtes*.
Ils *urent*.

Future. Singular.

Je rec-*evrai*, I ſhall or will receive.
Tu *evras*.
Il *evra*.

Plural.

Nous *evrons*, we ſhall or will receive.
Vous *evrez*.
Ils *evront*.

Cond. preſent Singular.

Je rec-*evrois*, I ſhould, would, could, or might, receive.
Tu *evrois*.
Il *evroit*.

Plural.

Nous *evrions*, we ſhould, &c. receive.
Vous *evriez*.
Ils *evroient*.

Compound Tenses.

Pret. indefin. *J'ai reçu*, I have received.
Pret. ant. def. *J'eus reçu*, I had received.
Preterpluperf. *J'avois reçu*, I had received.
Future paſt. *J'aurai reçu*, I ſhall, &c. have received.
Cond. paſt. *J'aurois reçu*, I ſhould, &c. have received.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Singular.

Reç-*ois*, receive thou.
Qu'il *oive*, let him receive.

Plural.

evons, let us receive.
evez, receive ye.
Qu'ils *oivent*, let them receive.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Singular.

Que je reç-*oive*, that I may receive, or I receive.
tu *oives*.
il *oive*.

Plural.

nous *evions*, that we may receive.
vous *eviez*.
ils *oivent*.

Imperfect. Singular.

Que je reç-*uſſe*, that I might receive, or I received.
tu *uſſes*.
il *ût*.

Plural.

nous *uſſions*, that we might receive.
vous *uſſiez*.
ils *uſſent*.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Preterite. *Que j'aie reçu*, that I may have received.
Preterplu. *Que j'euſſe reçu*, that I might have received.

Recevoir des nouvelles de quelqu'un, To hear from ſomebody.

After the ſame manner are conjugated 7 verbs only; the following are excepted, being irregulars:

Aſſeoir, to ſit down.
Déchoir, to decay.
Falloir, (verb impersonal,) to be needful.
Mouvoir, to move.
Pleuvoir, (v. imp.) to rain.
Pouvoir, to be able.
Savoir, to know.
Valoir,

Valoir, to be worth. *Vouloir*, to be willing.
Voir, to ſee. And their compounds.

EXERCISES ON THIS CONJUGATION.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRES. I entertain great hopes from his con-
conc-evoir, v. *eſpérance*, f. *con-*
duct. —— I am to write to your brother to-morrow
duite, f. * *écrire*, v.
to let him know that your father is arrived. —
pour faire, v. *ſavoir*, v.
A commander ought to be intrepid in the midſt
commandant, m. *d-evoir*, v. *au milieu*, m.
of dangers.—He is to go and breakfaſt at my
aller, v. & *déjeuner*, v. *chez*, p.
uncle's next Sunday, and he is to come and ſup
venir, v. & *ſouper*, v.
with us.—We ſometimes entertain a hatred for per-
quelquefois, adv. *haine*, f.
ſons who deſerve our friendſhip. — Do you not per-
mériter, v. *amitié*, f. *ap-*
ceive a mountain beyond that tree? —We are
perc-evoir, v. *derriere*, p.
to remit him the value in goods or in
remettre, v. *valeur*, f. *en*, p. *marchandiſe*, f.
money.—Are you not to dine with my father and mo-
ther to-morrow?—Men commonly owe their vir-
demain, adv. *d-evoir*, v.

* When the verb *to be* is uſed in the preſent or imperfect tenſes of the indicative mood, and precedes another verb in the infinitive mood, denoting a futurity in the action, it is to be rendered in French by the ſame tenſes of the verb *devoir*, and not by *être*: ex.

Je dois *aller au parc*, I *am* to go to the park.
Nous devions *lui écrire*, We *were* to write to him.

tues or their vices to education (as much as) to
autant que, c.

nature. —— Are theſe young ladies to go to the
aller, v.

ball ?
bal, m.

IMP. I owed four guineas to your aunt when ſhe
guinée, f.

died. —— Was not your brother to receive that money
mourut, v.

laſt Tueſday ? —— We received his tireſome viſits
Mardi, m. *ennuyant*, adj.

becauſe we were obliged to it. — Were you not to let
obliger, v. *faire*, v.

them know it ſooner ? —— They were not to ſtay
ſavoir, v. *reſter*, v.

above ſix weeks.
plus, adv.

PRET. I received yeſterday, with (a great deal) of
bien, adv.

pleaſure, the books you ſent me. — As ſoon as we
envoyer, v.

perceived the danger we warned him of it. — They
avertir, v.

heard yeſterday from your brother.

FUT. I ſhall entertain a bad opinion of you
mauvais, adj.

if you do not avoid Mr. R——'s company. — We
éviter, v.

ſhall owe him nothing more after this month. — I hope
après, p.

you will receive all my letters during my abſence.
pendant, p.

COND.

COND. PRE. I ſhould anſwer * your brother's
repondre, v. *à*
letter, but I have not time. — Ought not you ſiſter to
tems, m.
give your mother an account of all her actions? —
rendre, v. *compte*, m.
She would ſoon perceive the danger, if ſhe knew
bientôt, adv. *ſavoit*, v.
the conſequences of it. —— Children ſhould every day
learn ſomething by heart. —— You ſhould not
apprendre, v. *cœur*, m.
deſpiſe the advice that he gives you. — Should they,
mepriſer, v. *avis*, m.
after what they have done, expect to receive
après, p. *fait*, p.p. *s'attendre*, v. *à*
favours?

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Receive this ſmall preſent as a token of my friend-
marque, f.
ſhip.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRES. and IMP. Though I perceive ſhips
Quoique, &c. *vaiſſeau*, m.

* When the word *ſhould* expreſſes a duty or neceſſity, or can with propriety be turned by *ought*, it is rendered in French by the conditional preſent of the verb *devoir*: ex.

Je devrois *aller le voir*, I *ſhould*, or *ought to*, go and ſee him.
Vous devriez *le ſecourir dans ſa miſere*, &c. You *ſhould* help him in his miſery, &c.

The words *ſhould* or *ought*, when joined to the verb *to have*, immediately followed by a participle paſſive, muſt be rendered by the conditional paſt of the above verb, with the participle paſſive turned into the preſent of the infinitive mood: ex.

J'aurois du *l'obliger à reſter ici*, I *ſhould*, or *ought to*, *have* obliged him to ſtay here.
Nous aurions du *revenir plutôt*, We *ſhould have* come back ſooner.

(afar

(afar off,) I cannot diſtinguiſh them. —— He
de loin,adv. *ne ſaurois*,v.

wrote to us by the firſt poſt that we might
écrivit, v. *ordinaire*,m.

receive his orders (in proper time.)
à tems, adv.

Compound Tenses.

I have not yet received his anſwer. — You
encore,adv. *réponſe*,f.

ſhould have (been making) your theme this morning
faire, v. *matin*,m.

inſtead of playing. —— He has entertained the hope
au lieu,p.

of living here all his life. —— She ought to have
vivre,v. *ici*,adv. *vie*, f.

thanked him for the good advice he gave her.
remercier, v. *de*, p.

— When did you hear from your ſiſter? — We have

not heard from her ſince her departure. —— Your
depuis,p. *départ*, m.

uncle ſhould not have obliged him to pay half the
oncle,m. *à moitié*, f.

expences. —— We ſhould have owed him a hundred
frais,m. pl.

livres. — I beg your pardon, I ought not to have
livre,f. *demander*,v.

made you wait ſo long. —— Ought not we to
faire,v. *attendre*,v. *longtems*,adv.

have employed our time better than (we did) the
employer,v. *nous n'avons fait*

laſt three months we were in France.

FOURTH

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent. Vend-*re*, to ſell.
Part. active. *ant*, ſelling.
Part. paſſive. *u*, m. *ue*, f. ſold.

Indicative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Je vend-*s*, I ſell, I do ſell, or I am ſelling.
Tu *s*.
Il .

Plural.

Nous *ons*, we ſell, &c.
Vous *ez*.
Ils *ent*.

Imperfect. Singular.

Je vend-*ois*, I did ſell, or was ſelling.
Tu *ois*.
Il *oit*.

Plural.

Nous *ions*, we did ſell, &c.
Vous *iez*.
Ils *oient*.

Preterite. Singular.

Je vend-*is*, I ſold, or did ſell.
Tu *is*.
Il *it*.

Plural.

Nous *îmes*, we ſold, &c.
Vous *îtes*.
Ils *irent*.

Future. Singular.

Je vend-*rai*, I ſhall or will ſell.
Tu *ras*.
Il *ra*.

Plural.

Nous *rons*, we ſhall or will ſell.
Vous *rez*.
Ils *ront*.

Conditional

Conditional preſent. Singular.

Je vend-*rois*, I ſhould, could, would, or might, ſell.
Tu *rois*.
Il *roit*.

Plural.

Nous *rions*, we ſhould, &c. ſell.
Vous *riez*.
Ils *roient*.

Compound Tenses.

Pret. indefin. *J'ai vendu*, I have ſold.
Pret. ant. def. *J'eus vendu*, I had ſold.
Preterpluperf. *J'avois vendu*, I had ſold.
Future paſt. *J'aurai vendu*, I ſhall, &c. have ſold.
Cond. paſt. *J'aurois vendu*, I ſhould, &c. have ſold.

Imperative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Vend-*s*, ſell thou.
Qu'il *e*, let him ſell.

Plural.

ons, let us ſell.
ez, ſell ye.
Qu'ils *ent*, let them ſell.

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Que je vend-*e*, that I may ſell, or I ſell.
tu *es*.
il *e*.

Plural.

Que nous *ions*.
vous *iez*.
ils *ent*.

Imperfect. Singular.

Que je vend-*iſſe*, that I might ſell, or I ſold.
tu *iſſes*.
il *ît*.

Plural.

Plural.

Que nous vend-*issions.*
vous *issiez.*
ils *issent.*

Compound Tenses.

Preterite. *Que j'aie vendu*, that I may have ſold.
Preterplu. *Que j'euſſe vendu*, that I might have ſold.

After the ſame manner are conjugated about 40 verbs; the following are excepted as being irregulars:

Abſoudre, to abſolve,
Battre, to beat,
Boire, to drink,
Circoncire, to circumciſe,
Conclure, to conclude,
Conduire, to conduct,
And all the verbs ending in *uire.*
Confire, to preſerve,
Connoître, to know,
And all thoſe ending in *oitre.*
Coudre, to ſew,
Craindre, to fear,
And all thoſe ending in *indre.*
Croire, to believe,
Dire, to tell, to ſay,
Ecrire, to write,
Faire, to make, to do,
Frire, to fry,
Lire, to read,
Mettre, to put,
Moudre, to grind,
Naître, to be born,
Paître, to graſe, to feed,
Plaire, to pleaſe,
Prendre, to take,
Rire, to laugh,
Suffire, to ſuffice, to be ſufficient,
Suivre, to follow,
Se taire, to hold one's tongue,
Traire, to milk,
Vaincre, to conquer,
Vivre, to live,
And their compounds.

N. B. Verbs of this conjugation, whoſe radix terminates in *p*, as *romp-re*, *corromp-re*, &c. take a *t* in the third perſon ſingular of the preſent tenſe indicative mood: ex. *je romps*, *tu romps*, *il rompt*; the reſt are conjugated as *vendre.*

EXERCISES

EXERCISES ON THIS CONJUGATION.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRES. I do not mean to wrong him. —
prétend-re, v. *faire tort*, v. *lui*, pro.

Is your mother coming down? —— We expect our
deſcend-re, v. *attend-re*, v.

friend Mr. A——. —— Do not you forbid her to
défend-re, v. *de*

go there? — They ſell bad fruit.
aller, v. *mauvais*, adj.

IMP. Did I not interrupt him whilſt he
interromp-re, v. *pendant que*, c.

was anſwering them? — She was melting into tears
répond-re, v. *fond-re*, v. *en*, p. *larme*, f.

when you arrived. — Were we not loſing our time
arriver, v. *perd-re*, v. *tems*, m.

—— You were not ſpreading your nets. —— Did they
étend-re, v. *filet*, m.

corrupt our manners?
corromp-re, v. *mœurs*, f. pl.

PRET. (As ſoon as) I had received my money, I
Dès que, c.

returned them what they had lent me. — Did he not
rend-re, v. *prêter*, v.

hear you? —— We (waited for) them a month.
entend-re, v. *attend-re*, v. *mois*, m.

— (For how much) did you ſell it to them? — They
Combien, adv.

did ſpill all the wine.
répand-re v.

FUT. I ſhall ſhear my flock (in the) month
tond-re, v. *troupeau*, m. *au*

of

of May.—If you do not take care, the dog will
Mai,m. *prenez*,v. *garde*,f.

bite you.—Shall we not loſe if we play?—You
mord-re,v.

will melt it, if you put it into the fire.—
fond-re,v. *mettez*,v. *dans*,p.

They[1] ſhall[3] not[2] hear[3] [5] of[6] me[7] (any[5] more.)
entend-re parler,v. *plus*,adv.

COND. PRE. Should I not do him the juſ-
rend-re,v.

tice he deſerves?—Would he not interrupt you?—
mériter,v.

We would defend them if we could.—Why
defend-re,v. *pouvions*,v.

would you not anſwer if I were ſpeaking to you?
répond-re,v.

—Your hens would (lay eggs) every day if they
poule,f. *pond-re*,v.

were not ſo fat.
gras,adj.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Give[1] God[3] thanks[2].—Let her not come
Rend-re,v. *Dieu*,m. *grace*,f.

down.—Let us (give up) our accounts faithfully.—
rend-re,v. *compte*,m. *fidelement*,adv.

Do not loſe my book.—Let them hear the voice of
voix,f.

the Lord.
Seigneur,m.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRES. and IMP. Speak loud, that I may hear
haut,adv.

what you ſay.—She plays upon the harpſichord
dites,v. *claveſſin*,m.

though you forbid her to do it.—He wrote
quoique,c. *défend-re*,v. *de faire*,v. *écrivit*,v.
to us that we might not expect him.
attend-re,v.

Compound Tenses.

I have loſt my book; have you found it?—
perd-re,v. *trouver*,v.
She has broken her fan. — Have you not inter-
romp-re,v. *évantail*,m.
rupted me ſeveral times? — I had not then an-
alors, adv. *ré-*
ſwered his letter. — If they (had gone) there,
pond-re,v. *à* *étoient allés*,v.
would they not have loſt their time?—He ſays he
dit
would have ſold us very good wine.—Had you
vend-re,v.
not forbidden her to ſpeak?—That they might have
de
waited for us.

Recapitulatory Exercises on the Regular Verbs of the four Conjugations.

Indicative Mood.

Pres. I love attentive ſcholars, but I puniſh
attentif,adj. *écolier*,m. *mais*,c.
ſeverely lazineſs and inattention. — Your bro-
ſeverement,adv. *pareſſe*,f.
ther does not receive this news with pleaſure.—
nouvelle,f.
Do we not expect your mother to-day?—We
attendre,v.
hope (that) you will ſucceed in your undertaking.—
eſpérer,v. *réuſſir*,v.

Why

Why do you not fulfil your promiſe?——
Pourquoi, adv. *accomplir*, v. *promeſſe*, f.

They perceive the danger, and they do not en-
appercevoir, v. *ta-*

deavour to ſhun it.
cher, v. *de éviter*, v.

IMP. I was ſpeaking of your aunt when you
tante, f.

{came in,} and was doing her the juſtice ſhe deſerves.
entrer, v. *rendre*, v. *mériter*, v.

—Mr. N. did not act towards your ſon with much
agir, v. *fils*, m.

tenderneſs. — Mr. P. and I were anſwering your
tendreſſe, f.

letters when you arrived. — You undoubtedly en-
arriver, v. *ſans doute*, adv. *con-*

tertained great hopes from his laſt voyage. —
cevoir, v. *dernier*, adj.

They were ſpending their money in trifles, in-
dépenſer, v. *en*, p. *bagatelle*, f. *in-*

ſtead of buying books.
lieu de, c. *acheter*, v.

PRET. I built this houſe in one thouſand ſeven
hundred and ſeventy-nine. — Your father yeſterday
bier, v.

received agreeable news.—She burſt into tears af-
fondre, v. *a-*

ter your couſin was gone. — We ſent him a
près que, c. *parti*, p. p.

great deal of money unknown to your mother.——
à l'inſçu, p. *de*

Why did you not finiſh your work ſooner?——{ Ac-
finir, v. *Dès*

soon as) they perceived us they (ran away.)
que, c. *prirent la fuite.*

FUT. I will (give up) my accompts (at the) be-
rendre, v. *au*

ginning of next week. —My friend Mrs. R.
porchain, adj. *semaine*, f.

will dine with me next Wednesday.—We shall seize
Mercredi, m. *saisir*, v.

the first opportunity to thank him for his kind-
occasion, f. *pour remercier*, v. *de bon-*

nesses. —You will soon entertain a better opinion
tes, f. *bientôt*, adv.

of him.—Will not your sisters (come down) to day?
descendre, v.

COND. PRES. I would lay two guineas your
gager, v.

uncle is not yet arrived.—If my father were rich he
arriver, v.

would rebuild his country house.—Should we not ex-
rebatir, v. *Devoir*, v. *ex-*

press our gratitude towards those who do us
primer, v. *reconnoissance*, f. *font*, v.

good?—If you would, you could render great ser-
bien, m. *vouliez*, v. *rendre*, v.

vices to your country.—I am certain (that) they would
pays, m.

reward you if you deserved it.
recompenser, v. *mériter*, v.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Discharge with equity the duties of your office.—
Remplir, v. *équité*, f. *devoir*, m. *charge*, f.

Let him receive the punishment due to his crime.—
punition, f. *dû*, p. p.

Let

Let us give God thanks for the good news we re-
rendre, v. *grace*, f. *de*

ceived yesterday.——Imitate the great actions of your
hier, adv.

ancestors.—Let them enjoy the fruit of their la-
ancêtres, m. *jouir*, v. *de* *tra-*

bours.
vail, m.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRES. Write to me by the first post, that
Ecrivez, v. *ordinaire*, m. *afin que*, c.

I may receive your letter before my departure from
avant, p. *départ*, m.

London.—Though he hear what you say, yet
Quoique, c. *entendre*, v. *dites*, v.

he does not understand you.——She is never pleased
comprendre, v. *content*, adj.

though we obey her in (every thing.)—I will tell it
en, p. *tout*. *dirai*, v.

to you, provided you do not speak of it to your sis-
pourvûque, c.

ter.—He will pay them, provided they wait a
attendre, v.

little longer.
long tems, adv.

IMP. I wrote to your father (sometime ago,)
écrivis, v. *il y a quelquestems*,

that he might engage Mr. W. to come here and
afin que, c. *à*

spend the holidays with us.—That she might reflect
passer, v. *vacance*, f.

on her own conduct, and not on that of others.—
propre, adj.

He would not come to ſee us, for fear we ſhould
voulut,v. *de peur qué*,c.
perceive his bad deſigns.—Your uncle deſired that
ordonner,v.
you might ſell his two horſes to Mr. B. — I ſhould be
very ſorry if they fell into bad hands.
que,c. *tomber*,v.

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE COMPOUND TENSES.

I have ſpoken to my father of it, but he has not
yet given me any anſwer.—Have I not faith-
encore,adv.
fully executed your orders?—Has your ſiſter ſucceeded
in her undertaking?—We have not yet received any
remittance from America.—Mrs. N. told me you had
remiſe,f.
already ſold the half of your goods. —— Why
déjà,adv. *moitié*,f. *marchandiſe*,f.
did you not pay thoſe poor people? —— He would
gens,m.&f.pl.
have been puniſhed if I had not defended his right.——
droit,m.
They have ſold him four dozen of handkerchiefs at an
mouchoir,m. *à*
exorbitant price, but they have warranted them fine
prix,m. *garantir*,v.
and well worked. —We thought you would have
travailler,v. *croyions*,v.
brought your brother with you.—Have we not been
amener,v.

obliged

obliged to (wait for) Miſs A. ?—If you had truſted
de attendre,v. *confier*,v.
them with your goods, they would have ſtolen the
greateſt part of them.—It is for that reaſon my
partie,f. *Ce*,pro.
father has not (thought fit) to ſend them to you.—
juger,v. *à-propos*
Mr. D. had repreſented to him all the danger of it.—
Mrs. F. has gained her cauſe, but ſhe has loſt all
gagner,v. *perdre*,v.
her wealth. — Had I not finiſhed my work when
bien,m. *ouvrage*,m.
ſhe came in ?—You would have received your money
entrer,v.
(a month ago) if the mail had not been robbed.——
il y a un mois, *malle*,f. *voler*,v.
Mrs. P. told me ſhe would have paid you ſome time
ago if ſhe had ſold her goods.

CONJUGATION OF PASSIVE VERBS.

Verbs paſſive are very eaſily conjugated; it requires only that the participle paſſive of the verb, which is to be conjugated, be joined to the auxiliary verb *être*, to be, through all its moods, tenſes, numbers, and perſons. It is to be obſerved, that (in French) the participle paſſive varies according to the gender and number of the noun or pronoun, which ſtands as the nominative to the verb: ex.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

	M.	F.	
être	aim-*é*,	*ée*,	to be loved.
être	pun-*i*,	*ie*,	to be puniſhed.

étant

étant	aim-*é*,	*ée*,	being loved.
étant	pun-*i*,	*ie*,	being punished.
avoir été	aim-*é*,	*ée*,	to have been loved.
avoir été	pun-*i*,	*ie*,	to have been punished.
ayant été	aim-*é*,	*ée*,	having been loved.
ayant été	pun-*i*,	*ie*,	having been punished.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Singular.	M.	F.	
Je suis	aim-*é*,	*ée*,	&c. I am loved.
Je suis	pun-*i*,	*ie*,	&c. I am punished.
Plural.			
Nous sommes	aim-*és*,		&c. we are loved.
Nous sommes	pun-*is*,		&c. we are punished.

COMPOUND TENSES.

	M.	F.	
J'ai été, pardonn-*é*,	*ée*,		I have been forgiven.
J'ai été, pun-*i*,	*ie*,		I have been punished.
Nous avons été, aim-*és*,	*ées*,		We have been loved, &c.

OF NEUTER VERBS.

The conjugations of the above verbs are, like all others, distinguished by their terminations, and conjugated in the same manner.

Learners may easily know a neuter verb from an active one, because the latter generally has or can always have a direct case after it; whereas the neuter verb never has nor can have but an indirect case; for instance,

Dormir, to sleep;
Venir, to come;
Voyager, to travel;

are neuter verbs, because we cannot say,

Dormir une maison, to sleep a house.
Venir un livre, to come a book.
Voyager la chambre, to travel the room, &c.

In the same manner,

Jouir, to enjoy;

Profiter,

Profiter, to profit by, to take advantage of;
Parvenir, to attain, to reach;

are neuter verbs, becauſe they can only govern an indirect caſe: ex.

Jouir d'*une grande réputation*,	To enjoy a great reputation.
Profiter du *tems*,	To take advantage *of the* weather.
Parvenir à *ſon but*,	To attain one's end.

As it is impoſſible for the neuter verbs to govern an abſolute caſe, it follows that every verb of this kind, which governs an abſolute caſe, can no longer be looked upon as a neuter: ex.

Pleurer, to weep, to bewail;
Sortir, to go out;
Monter, to go up, to come up;
Plaider, &c. to plead;

are neuter verbs, but become active when they govern any object in the abſolute caſe or accuſative: ex.

Elle pleure ſes péchés,	She bewails her ſins.
Sortez ce cheval,	Bring out that horſe.
Il plaida ſa cauſe lui-même,	He himſelf pleaded his cauſe.

But there are ſome neuter verbs which can never have an active ſignification, and which we are obliged to conjugate with the verb *faire*, when we wiſh to expreſs an action paſſing from the ſubject who acts: ex.

Ferai-je bouillir *ou* rotir *cette viande?*	Shall I *boil* or *roaſt* that meat?
Faites le bouillir,	*Boil* it.

Some of the neuter verbs conjugate their compound tenſes by the auxiliary verb *avoir*, to have, others by the verb *être*, to be.

The general rule, to know what neuter verbs conjugate their compound tenſes with the auxiliary *avoir*, and which are the others that are conjugated with the verb *être*, is to pay attention to the participle paſſive of the neuter verb which is conjugated.

If that participle be declinable, that is, if it can be applied to a man or a woman, or any other animate object, the compounds of its verb are conjugated with the verb *être:* ex.

Arriver, to arrive;
Mourir, to die;
Naître, to be born;
Tomber, to fall;
Venir, &c. to come;

take the auxiliary verb *être*, becauſe we can ſay,

Un homme arrivé, a man arrived.
Une femme morte, a woman dead.
Un enfant né, a child born.
Un cheval tombé, &c. a horſe fallen.

If, on the contrary, the participle be indeclinable, that is, if it cannot be ſaid of any animate object, the compound tenſes of that verb muſt be conjugated with the verb *avoir:* ex.

Dormir, to ſleep;
Languir, to languiſh, to linger;
Régner, to reign;
Vivre, &c. to live;

take the auxiliary verb *avoir*, becauſe we cannot ſay,

Un homme dormi, a man ſlept.
Une femme languie, a woman languiſhed, or lingered.
Un enfant régné a child reigned.
Un cheval vécu, &c. a horſe lived.

The verb *courir* is in this laſt claſs, when it ſignifies the rapid motion of the body, moving in a certain direction with all the ſwiftneſs of its legs; as we cannot, in this ſenſe, ſay,

Un homme couru, a man run;
Une femme courue, a woman run;

but, *je ſuis couru*, *j'étois couru*, &c. but *j'ai couru*, *j'avois couru*, &c.

When we ſay in French *un homme couru*, *une femme courue*, we mean a man or a woman much ſought after; a perſon or thing we are very eager to ſee: ex.

Ce prédicateur eſt fort couru;
Cette danſeuſe eſt fort courue;

that

that is, people are very eager to hear that preacher, to ſee that dancer.

In the above general rule are not included ſome neuter verbs, which ſometimes take the auxiliary *avoir*, and ſometimes the auxiliary *être*: theſe are,

Monter, to go or come up.	*Demeurer*, to live, to remain.
Deſcendre, to go or come down.	*Périr*, to periſh.
Sortir, to go out.	*Paſſer*, to paſs, to go by.
Reſter, to ſtay, to remain.	*Echapper*, to eſcape.

Monter and *deſcendre* often govern an abſolute regimen, in which caſe they are conſidered as active verbs and conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir*: ex.

J'ai monté les dégrés,	I *have* aſcended the ſtairs, or gone up the ſtairs.
Nous avons deſcendu la montagne,	We *have* come down the hill.

When the above verbs are employed without regimen, their compounds are conjugated with *être*: ex.

Je ſuis *monté*,	I *am* up.
Elle eſt *déjà deſcendue*,	She is down already.

Sortir is conjugated with the verb *être*, when it ſignifies to quit, to leave the place wherein one was dwelling, or living; but it is conjugated with the verb *avoir*, when we wiſh to convey that we have been from home, and that we are come back again: ex.

Il eſt *ſorti de priſon*,	He is out of priſon,
J'ai ſorti ce matin à dix heures,	I went out this morning at ten o'clock.
Avez-vous ſorti ce matin?	*Did* you go out this morning.
Nous n'avons pas ſorti de tout le jour,	We *have* not been out all day.
Le roi n'a pas ſorti de ſa chambre,	The king *has* not been out of his room.

Demeurer and *reſter* take the auxiliary *avoir*, when we mean that we were, but are no longer, in a place: ex.

J'ai demeuré deux ans à la campagne,	I lived two years in the country.
Il a reſté vingt ans à Rome,	He reſided twenty years at Rome.

On the contrary, they take the auxiliary *être*, while the perſon or perſons are ſtill in a place: ex.

Il eſt demeuré à Londres pour y ſoliciter un évêché,	He has remained in London to ſolicit a biſhopric.
Nous ſommes reſtés à York pour y finir nos affaires,	We *have* tarried at York to conclude our affairs.

Périr indifferently takes either the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*: ex.

Il eſt péri deux vaiſſeaux ſur mer,	Two ſhips *have* periſhed at ſea.
Trois hommes ont *péri par cette tempête,*	Three men *have* periſhed by that ſtorm.
La plûpart des équipages ſont péris dans les ondes, le reſte eſt péri de miſere,	Moſt of the crews periſhed in the waves, the reſt periſhed with miſery.

It ſeems however that the auxiliary *avoir* is more generally uſed.

Paſſer ſometimes governs an indirect caſe, or is immediately followed by the prepoſition *par*, or ſome other, attended by a noun or pronoun, in which caſe its compounds are conjugated with the auxiliary verb *avoir*, whether it be uſed in its proper ſignification or in a figurative ſenſe: ex.

Le roi a paſſé par Kenſington pour aller à Windſor,	The king went through Kenſington to go to Windſor.
Nous avons paſſé devant l'égliſe,	We went by the church.
Elle a paſſé près du parc de St. Jacques,	She went by St. James's park.

La

La couronne de Naples a paſſé dans la maiſon de Bourbon, The crown of Naples paſſed in the houſe of Bourbon.

In all other caſes, *paſſer* takes the auxiliary *être:* ex.

Le roi eſt *paſſé, vous ne ſauriez le voir,* The king *is* gone by, you cannot ſee him.
Le beau tems eſt *paſſé,* The fine weather *is* over.
Vos chagrins ſont *paſſés,* Your ſorrows *are* over.

We ſometimes ſay, *ce mot eſt paſſé,* when we mean that it is no longer in uſe; but when we ſay, *ce mot a paſſé,* we underſtand *in the language,* which ſignifies that it has been received or adopted.

Paſſer is often a reflected paſſive verb, when ſits compound tenſes follow the rule of the reflective verbs.

Paſſer, in ſeveral caſes, becomes an active verb and governs an abſolute caſe: ex.

Paſſez cela *ſur le feu,* Paſs *that* over the fire.
Les ennemis ont paſſé la riviere, The enemies have croſſed the *river.*
*Paſſer l'*épée *au travers du corps,* To run one through the body.

Echapper has two ſignifications; ſometimes it is uſed in the ſenſe of *éviter,* to avoid, when it is conjugated with the auxiliary *avoir,* and governs the dative caſe; ſometimes it ſignifies to come or go out by force or ſtratagem from a place in which one was confined or ſhut up: in this caſe, it takes the verb *être* for auxiliary: ex.

Vous avez *échappé là à un grand danger,* You *have* eſcaped a great danger.
Il a *échappé à la mort.* He *has* eſcaped death.
Ils ſont *échappés de leur priſon,* or, They *have* eſcaped from their priſon, or, made their eſcape.
Ils ſe ſont *échappés de leur priſon,*
On la tenoit depuis quelques jours, mais elle eſt *échappée,* or, *elle s'*eſt *échappée,* They had her for ſome days, but ſhe *has* eſcaped, or, made her eſcape.

N. B. Exercises on the neuter verbs will be found among the irregular whenever they occur.

REFLECTED VERBS.

We call *reflected*, or *reflective*, a verb whose subject and object are the same person or thing; so that the subject, that acts, acts upon itself, and is at the same time the agent and the object of the action: ex.

Je me connois,	I know myself;
Tu te loues,	Thou praisest thyself:
Il se blesse,	He wounds himself;
Nous nous chauffons,	We warm ourselves;

are reflected verbs, because it is I who know and who am known; thou who praisest and who art praised; he who wounds and who is wounded, &c.

In order to express the relation of the nominative to the verb with its regimen or object, we always make use of the conjunctive pronouns, *me*, *te*, *se*, myself, thyself, himself, herself, for the singular; *nous*, *vous*, *se*, ourselves, yourselves, themselves, for the plural. But it frequently happens, that, in English, the second pronoun is implied though it must be expressed in French: ex.

Je me *souviens*,	I remember.
Elle ne veut pas se *marier*,	She will not marry.
Nous nous *plaignons*, &c.	We complain, &c.

The reflected verbs may be divided in the following manner: viz.

Verbes réfléchis par la signification,	Verbs reflective by signification.
Verbes réfléchis par l'expression,	Verbs reflective by expression.
Verbes réfléchis directs,	Verbs reflective direct.
Verbes réfléchis indirects,	Verbs reflective indirect.
Verbes réfléchis passifs.	Verbs reflective passive.

A verb reflective by signification is properly a verb wherein the person or thing that acts is at the same time the object of the action: ex.

Je

Je me *chauffe*, I warm *myſelf*.
Elle ſe *bleſſe*, She wounds *herſelf*, &c.

A verb is reflective by expreſſion when we add to it the double pronoun without the perſon or thing that acts being the object of the action: ſuch as,

Je me *repens*,	I repent;
Il s'*en va*,	He is going away;
Elle ſe *meurt*,	She is dying;
Nous nous *appercevons de notre erreur*,	We perceive our error;

which merely ſignify *je ſuis repentant*, *il va*, *elle meurt*, *nous appercevons notre erreur*.

When the conjunctive pronoun is the objective caſe of the verb reflective by expreſſion, we ſay it is a *verb reflective direct*; when the ſame conjunctive pronoun is the indirect regimen, (that is, governed in the dative caſe,) we call it *reflective indirect*: thus,

Je me *flatte*,	I flatter *myſelf*;
Tu te *vantes*,	Thou boaſteſt;
Il ſe *félicite*, &c.	He congratulates himſelf, &c.

are verbs *reflective direct*. On the contrary,

Il ſe *donne des louanges*,	He gives *himſelf* praiſes;
Nous nous *promettons un bon ſuccès*,	We promiſe *ourſelves* good ſucceſs;
Vous vous *arrachez une dent*, &c.	You draw one of your teeth, &c.

are verbs *reflective indirect*, becauſe it is as if we ſaid, *il donne des louanges à ſoi*, *nous promettons un bon ſuccès à nous*, *vous arrachez une dent à vous*, &c.

Verb reflective paſſive. This verb is ſo called, becauſe it not only expreſſes a paſſive ſenſe, but that ſenſe can only be rendered by a paſſive verb: ex.

Cela ſe *voit tous les jours*,	That is ſeen every day.
Cela ne ſe *dit point*,	That is not ſaid.
Ce livre ſe *vend bien*,	That book ſells well.
Ce bruit ſe *répand*,	That rumour is ſpread.

Ces fruits ſe *mangent en hiver*,	Theſe fruits are eaten in winter.
Cet homme s'*eſt trouvé innocent du crime dont on l'accuſoit*,	That man has been found innocent of the crime with which he was accuſed.

It is as if there were *cela eſt vu tous les jours*, *cela n'eſt point dit*, &c. which exactly correſpond with the idiom of the Engliſh language.

This laſt verb is of great uſe in the French language, becauſe, as it has been obſerved before, there is properly no paſſive verbs in that language, and we are often obliged to ſupply the want of them by the above verb, or by the pronoun general *on* to avoid ambiguity or falſe ſenſe: if, for inſtance, inſtead of ſaying, *ces fruits ſe mangent en hiver*, ou *on mange ces fruits en hiver*, I ſaid, *ces fruits ſont mangés en hiver*, one might underſtand that thoſe fruits are already eaten; whereas I only wiſh to expreſs the proper ſeaſon to eat thoſe fruits.

Some authors call *réciproques*, reciprocal, all theſe reflected verbs; but this denomination to me has appeared inſufficient to well determine the nature and uſe of theſe verbs. Others limit the reciprocal verb to ſignify what two perſons or two things reciprocally do to each other: thus,

Pierre et Jean ſe *battent*,	Peter and John are fighting or beating each other,
Paul et Robert s'*aiment*,	Paul and Robert love each other,
Le feu et l'eau ſe *détruiſent*,	Fire and water deſtroy each other,

are *reciprocal verbs*, becauſe it is as if we ſaid, *Pierre et Jean ſe battent réciproquement l'un l'autre*, *Paul et Robert s'aiment réciproquement*, &c.

This diſtinction of the reciprocal verbs may be adopted, obſerving at the ſame time that we often prefix the prepoſition *entre* to the verb, the better to expreſs the reciprocity: ex.

Pierre et Jean s'entr*aiment*,	Peter and John love each other.

Ils

*Ils s'*entre*louent*,	They praiſe one another.
*Elles s'*entre*haïſſent*,	They hate each other.
*Le feu et l'eau s'*entre*détruiſent*, &c.	Fire and water deſtroy each other.

All the reflected and reciprocal verbs, without exception, are conjugated with the auxiliary verb *être*; hence it may be believed how much French people are ſhocked to hear any one who has learned that language ſay,

*Je m'*ai *acheté un cheval*,	I bought myſelf a horſe;
*Je m'*avois *bleſſé*, or	I had hurt myſelf;
*Il s'*a *fait mal*,	He has hurt himſelf;
*Elle s'*avoit *moqué de moi*, &c.	She had laughed at me, &c.

too common expreſſions made uſe of by many Engliſh people who ſpeak without principles; whereas we muſt ſay,

Je me ſuis *acheté un cheval.*
*Je m'*étois *bleſſé*, or
*Il s'*eſt *fait mal.*
*Elle s'*étoit *moquée de moi.*

Nous nous ſommes *informés*,	We have inquired.
Ils ſe ſont promenés,	They have walked.
*Ils s'*eſt *paſſé d'étranges choſes depuis votre départ*,	Strange things have happened ſince your departure.
*Ils s'*eſt *paſſé bien des années depuis que j'ai ouï parler de cette affaire*,	Many years have elapſed ſince I heard of that affair.

It muſt be owned that, in the compounds of moſt part of theſe verbs, the verb *être* is but the ſubſtitute of the verb *avoir*; but is impoſſible to uſe *avoir* as auxiliary to a verb which has for its objective caſe a conjunctive pronoun which relates to the principle of the action of that verb, and which precedes the auxiliary; for, though we ſay,

Il a voulu ſe *tuer*, He would kill himſelf;

yet, if we change the place of the pronoun, we muſt ſay, *Il* s'eſt *voulu tuer*, which is the idiom of the language.

CONJUGATION OF THE REFLECTED VERBS.

The conjugation of the following verb may ſerve as a model for all the reflected or reciprocal verbs.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Se *promener*, to walk.
Part act. Se *promenant*, walking.

M. Sing. F.
Part. paſſ. *promen-é*, *ée*, walked.

Plural.
Part. paſt. *promen-és*. *ées*, walked.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Preterite S'*être promené*, to have walked.
Part. paſt. S'*étant promené*, having walked.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Singular.
Je me *promene*, I walk, or do walk, or am walking.
Tu te *promenes*.
Il ſe *promene*.

Plural.
Nous nous *promenons*, we walk, &c.
Vous vous *promenez*.
Ils ſe *promenent*.

Imperfect. Singular.
Je me *promenois*, I did walk, or walked, or was walking.
Tu te *promenois*.
Il ſe *promenoit*.

Plural.
Nous nous *promenions*, we did walk, &c.
Vous vous *promeniez*.
Ils ſe *promenoient*.

Preterite. Singular.
Je me *promenai*, I did walk, or walked.
Tu te *promenas*.
Il ſe *promena*.

Plural.

Plural.

Nous nous *promenâmes*, we did walk, &c.
Vous vous *promenâtes*.
Ils ſe *promenerent*.

Future. Singular.

Je me *promenerai*, I ſhall or will walk.
Tu te *promeneras*.
Il ſe *promenera*.

Plural.

Nous nous *promenerons*, we ſhall or will walk.
Vous vous *promenerez*.
Ils ſe *promeneront*.

Conditional preſent. Singular.

Je me *promenerois*, I would, ſhould, or could, walk.
Tu te *promenerois*.
Il ſe *promeneroit*.

Plural.

Nous nous *promenerions*, we would, &c. walk.
Vous vous *promeneriez*.
Ils ſe *promeneroient*.

Compound Tenses.

M. F.

Pret. indefin. *Je* me *ſuis promen-é, ée*, I have walked.
Pret. ant. def. *Je* me *fus promen-é, ée*, I had walked.
Peterpluperf. *Je* m'*étois promen-é, ée*, I had walked.
Future paſt. *Je* me *ſerai promen-é, ée*, I ſhall or will have walked.
Cond. paſt. *Je* me *ſerois promen-é, ée*, I ſhould, &c. have walked.

Imperative Mood.

Preſent. Singular.

Promene toi,* walk thou.
Qu'il ſe *promene*, let him walk.

* When the verb is conjugated with a *negation* theſe three pronouns are put before the verb: ex. *ne* vous *promenez pas*, do not walk; and *toi* be changed into *te*; ex. *ne* te *promene pas*.

Plural

Plural.

Promenons nous,* let us walk
Promenez vous,* walk ye.
Qu'ils ſe *promenent*, let them walk.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent. Singular.

Que je me *promene*, that I may walk.
tu te *promenes*.
il ſe *promene*.

Plural.

nous nous *promenions*, that we may walk.
vous vous *promeniez*.
il ſe *promenent*.

Imperfect. Singular.

Que je me *promenaſſe*, that I might walk.
tu te *promenaſſes*.
il ſe *promenât*.

Plural.

nous nous *promenaſſions*, that we might walk.
vous vous *promenaſſiez*.
il ſe *promenaſſent*.

COMPOUND TENSES.

M. F.

Preterite. *Que je* me *ſois promen-é, ée*, that I may have walked.

Preterpluperf. *Que je* me *fuſſe promen-é, ée*, that I might have walked.

The learner may here be again reminded, that it is neceſſary to conjugate this verb with a negation and interrogation: ex.

Je ne me *promene pas*, I do not walk.
Vous promenez-vous? do you walk?
Ne ſe *promene-t-il pas?* does he not walk? &c.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Me ſuis-je promené? Have I walked? or did I walk?

Ne

Ne vous êtes-vous pas chauffé?	Have you not warmed yourſelf? or did you not warm yourſelf?
Mon couſin s'eſt-il informé?	Has my couſin inquired? or did my couſin inquire?
Votre frere ne s'eſt-il pas repenti?	Has not your brother repented? or did not your brother repent?

We ſay in French,

Se promener à cheval, en caroſſe,	To take a ride, an airing, on horſeback, in a coach.
Se promener ſur l'eau, ſur la riviere,	To go upon the water, on the river.

EXERCISES UPON THE REFLECTED VERBS.

N. B. Verbs marked * are irregular: ſee the irregular verbs.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRES. I riſe (early) every morning
ſe lever, v. *de bonne heure*, adv. *matin*, m.

— Does not your brother remember to have
ſe reſſouvenir, v.* ☞

ſeen me? — My ſiſter is not well, ſhe applies her-
vu, p.p. *ſœur*, f.† *s'appliquer*, v.

ſelf (too much) to ſtudy. — We rejoice at the good
trop, adv. *étude*, f. *ſe réjouir*, v. *de*

news he has brought us. — When do you in-
nouvelle, f. *apporté*, p.p. *ſe pro-*

tend to go and ſee Mrs. H? — Do you not
poſer, v. *de aller*, v. ☞ *voir*, v.

repent of what you have done to her? — I
ſe repentir, v.* *de* *fait*, p.p.

† When we mean to expreſs the ſtate of a perſon's health, inſtead of the verb *être*, we muſt uſe the reflected one *ſe porter*: ex.
Ma ſœur ne ſe porte *pas bien*, My ſiſter is not well.

believe

believe your brothers are not well; for, I have not
croire,v.* † *car*,c.

ſeen them this week.
vu,p.p. *ſemaine*,f.

IMP. I was riding on horſeback in the park when
parc,m. *quand*,c.

I met him. — Was he not warming himſelf
rencontrer,v. *ſe chauffer*,v.

when you (came in?) — We did not imagine he
entrer,v. *s'imaginer*,v.

would ſucceed ſo well. — You were boaſting too
réuſſir,v. *ſe vanter*,v.

much of what you had done for him. — They did
fait,p.p.

not expect that we ſhould meet them.
s'attendre,v.

PRET. I inquired after you yeſterday. — Did
s'informer,v. *de hier*,adv.

not my ſon behave well in the laſt war? —
fils,m. *ſe comporter*,v. *dernier*,adj. *guerre*,f.

Corn was ſold yeſterday for —— a buſhel. — We
ſe vendre,v.

ſaw ourſelves ſurrounded by more than twenty
ſe voir,v.* *entouré*,p.p.

perſons in an inſtant. — Did you not find
en,p. *ſe trouver*,v.

yourſelves obliged to go there? — They did not
obligé,p.p. *de aller*,v.

ſtop one minute.
s'arrêter,v. *minute*,f.

FUT. I will not complain of you if you pro-
ſe plaindre,v.* *pro-*

miſe me to behave better. — Will your bird
mettre,v.* *de mieux*,adv. *oiſeau*,m.

(grow

(grow tame?) — Shall we ſubmit ourſelves to
s'apprivoiſer,v. *ſe ſoumettre*,v.*

his judgement — You will ruin yourſelves if you
jugement,m. *ſe ruiner*,v.

continue (gaming.) — Will they not perceive
continuer,v. *de jouer*,v. *s'appercevoir*,v.

it (as ſoon as) they come into the room?
dès que,c. *entrer*,v. *chambre*,f.

COND. PRÈS. If I were in your place I would not
à

vex myſelf — Would ſhe not (make her eſ-
ſe chagriner,v. *s'échap-*

cape?) — We would embark (this day) if the
per,v. *s'embarquer*,v. *aujourd'hui*

weather (would permit.) — Why would you expoſe
tems *le permettoit*,v. *s'expoſer*,v.

yourſelves to their fury? — They would agree
fureur,f. *s'accorder*,v.

very well if they were not ſo proud.
bien,adv. *orgueilleux*,adj.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

I give you leave to go out, but do not
donner,v. *permiſſion*,f. *de ſortir*,v. *mais*,c.

overheat yourſelf. — Let him amuſe himſelf a
s'échauffer,v. *s'amuſer*,v. *un*

little in my garden. — Let us remember what
peu,adv. *jardin*,m. *ſe reſſouvenir de*,v.*

we are to do. — Endeavour to pleaſe your maſter,
† *faire*,v. *S'efforcer*,v. *de plaire*,v. *à maître*,m.

and do not ſo often miſtake in the tenſes, numbers,
ſe tromper,v.

† See the reference * in the exerciſes upon the third conjugation, page 137.

and

and perſons, of the verbs.—Let them fall aſleep.
s'endormir,v.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRES. I muſt apply myſelf to the French
Il faut que s'appliquer,v.
language. — I will hide it, for fear ſhe ſhould
langue,f. *cacher*,v. *de peur que*,c.
perceive it. — Provided we remember to
s'appercevoir,v.*en*,pro. *Pourvûque*,c. *de*
aſk him how his mother does.
demander,v. *comment*,adv. *ſe porter*,v.
—(In order that) you may not boaſt (ſo much.)
Afin que,c. *ſe vanter*,v. *tant*,adv.
—I have told them who you are, that they may
dit,p.p. *afin que*,c.
behave better another time.
ſe comporter,v. *fois*,f.

IMP. That I might not ruin myſelf. — That
ſe ruiner,v.
he might not meddle with my affairs. — That we
ſe mêler,v. *de*
might excuſe ourſelves. — That you might not go
s'excuſer,v. *s'en*
away.—That they might not repent too late.
aller,v.* *ſe repentir*,v.**trop tard*,adv.

COMPOUND TENSES.

I have inquired after you and your ſiſter. — He
s'informer,v. *de*
ſays you have not been well while you were in
dit,v. *pendant que*,c. *à*
the country. — Has not your couſin laughed at
campagne,f. *couſin*,m. *ſe moquer*,v. *de*
me? — Did we not get up at ſix (o'clock?)— They
ſe lever,v.*à* *heure*,f.
have

have perceived the trick, but it was too late? — Did
détour,m.
you remember me? —— I had not applied
ſe reſſouvenir,v. *de* *s'appliquer*,v.
myſelf enough. — Had not your ſiſter imagined that
aſſez,adv. *s'imaginer*,v.
they would have found themſelves obliged to go
ſe trouver,v. *obligé*,p.p. *de*
to France? — Many things have been ſaid of them
† *ſe dire*,v.
which are not true. — We had thought ourſelves a-
ſe croire,v.* *ca-
ble to reſiſt them, but we have (been de-
pable,adj. *de réſiſter*, v. *mais*,c. *ſe trom-*
ceived.) — Did you not hide yourſelves in order
per, v. *ſe cacher*, v.
to ſurpriſe them? — When I (ſhall) have walk-
de ſurprendre,v, *Quand*,adv.
ed five or ſix minutes in the garden I will reſt
ſe repoſer, v.
myſelf. — Why did you exhauſt yourſelf as you have
s'épuiſer,v.
done? —— Our ſailors would have behaved with
fait,p p. *ſe comporter*,v.
more reſolution. —— Would you not have excuſed
s'excuſer,v.
yourſelf? — When they have repented (of) their faults
ſe repentir,v.
I will forgive them. —— If I had been in your place, I
à
would not have meddled with their affairs. —— Your
ſe mêler,v. *de*

† See the indefinite article.

friend would not have complained of you, and you
ſe plaindre, v.*

never would have fallen out for ſo ſmall a matter.
ſe brouiller, v. *choſe*, f.

CONJUGATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

Theſe are called *irregulars* becauſe their conjugation deviates from the general rule, either by their terminations, or the want of ſome of their moods, tenſes, perſons, or numbers.

VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

ALLER, TO GO.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Aller*, to go.
Part. act. *Allant*, going.
Part. paſſ. *Allé*, gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Vais*, *vas*, *va*, I go, or am going.
Plur. *Allons*, *allez*, *vont*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Allois*, *allois*, *alloit*, I did go, or was going.
Plur. *Allions*, *alliez*, *alloient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Allai*, *allas*, *alla*, I went, or did go.
Plur. *Allâmes*, *allâtes*, *allerent*; or,

Sing. *Fus*, *fus*, *fut*, I went, or did go.
Plur. *Fûmes*, *fûtes*, *furent*.

Future.

Sing. *Irai*, *iras*, *ira*, I ſhall or will go.
Plur. *Irons*, *irez*, *iront*.

Conditional

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Irois, irois, iroit,* I ſhould, could, would, or might, go.

Plur. *Irions, iriez, iroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Va, aille,* go thou.
Plur. *Allons, allez, aillent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Aille, ailles, aille,* that I may go.
Plur. *Allions, alliez, aillent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Allaſſe, allaſſes, allât,* that I might go.
Plur. *Allaſſions, allaſſiez, allaſſent.*

Among the compound tenſes of this verb, it is to be remarked that thoſe which are formed by the participle *allé* ſignify that we are or were yet in the place mentioned at the time we are or were ſpeaking. Whence it follows that the firſt perſon of the preterite indefinite,

Je ſuis allé, I have gone, &c.
Tu ès allé, &c.

can ſeldom be uſed in diſcourſe, for, we cannot naturally ſay that we are ſtill in a place which can only be mentioned in a paſt time, after we have left it; therefore we make uſe of the compound tenſes of the verb *être*, as *j'ai été, tu as été, j'eus été, j'avois été, j'aurois été*, &c. for, when we ſay,

Il eſt allé à Londres, He is gone to London, we give to underſtand that he is ſtill in London, or is on his way going to London; on the contrary,

Il a été à Londres, He has been or gone to London, means that he has gone to London, but is returned.

The above verb is alſo conjugated as a reflected one with the particle *en*: ex.

*S'*en *aller*, to go away.
*Je m'*en *vais*, I go or am going away.
*Tu t'*en *vas*, thou goeſt or art going away.
*Il s'*en *va*, he goes or is going away.
Nous nous en *allons*, we go or are going away.
Vous vous en *allez*, you go or are going away.
*Ils s'*en *vont*, they go or are going away.

Negatively.

*Je ne m'*en *vais pas*, I am not going away.
*Il ne s'*en *va pas*, he is not going away.
Nous ne nous en *allons pas*, we are not going away.
Vous ne vous en *allez pas*, *&c.* you are not going away, &c.

Interrogatively.

*S'*en *va-t-il?* is he going away?
Vous en *allez-vous?* *&c.* are you going away? &c.
*Ne s'*en *vont-ils pas?* *&c.* are they not going away? &c.

Its compound tenſes are,

*Je m'*en *ſuis allé*, I have gone away.
*Je m'*en *fus allé*, I had gone away.
*Je m'*en *étois allé*, I had gone away.
*Je m'*en *ſerai allé*, I ſhall have gone away, &c.

VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

ACQUERIR, TO ACQUIRE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Acquérir*, to acquire.
Part. act. *Acquérant*, acquiring.
Part. paſſ. *Acquis*, acquired.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Acquiers*, *acquiers*, *acquiert*, I acquire, or am acquiring.

Plur. *Acquérons*, *acquérez*, *acquierent*.

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Acquérois, acquérois, acquéroit,* I did acquire, or was acquiring.

Plur. *Acquérions, acquériez, acquéroient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Acquis, acquis, acquit,* I acquired, or did acquire.

Plur. *Acquîmes, acquîtes, acquirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Acquerrai, acquerras, acquerra,* I ſhall or will acquire.

Plur. *Acquerrons, acquerrez, acquerront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Acquerrois, acquerrois, acquerroit,* I ſhould, would, or could, acquire.

Plur. *Acquerrions, acquerriez, acquerroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Acquiers, acquiere,* acquire thou.

Plur. *Acquérons, acquérez, acquierent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que

Sing. *Acquiere, acquieres, acquiere,* that I may acquire.

Plur. *Acquérions, acquériez, acquierent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Acquiſſe, acquiſſes, acquît,* I might acquire.

Plur. *Acquiſſions, acquiſſiez, acquiſſent.*

QUERIR, TO FETCH,

The primitive of the above verb, is never uſed but in the preſent of the infinitive mood: ex.

Envoyez-moi quérir, ſend for me.

CONQUERIR, TO CONQUER; *REQUERIR*, TO REQUIRE; are conjugated like *ACQUERIR*.

BOUILLIR, TO BOIL.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Bouillir*, to boil.
Part. act. *Bouillant*, boiling.
Part. paſſ. *Bouilli*, boiled.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Bous*, *bous*, *bout*, I boil, or am boiling.
Plur. *Bouillons*, *bouillez*, *bouillent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Bouillois*, *bouillois*, *bouilloit*, I did boil, or was
Plur. *Bouillions*, *bouilliez*, *bouilloient*. boiling.

Preterite.

Sing. *Bouillis*, *bouillis*, *bouillit*, I boiled, or did boil.
Plur. *Bouillimes*, *bouillites*, *bouillirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Bouillirai*, *bouilliras*, *bouillira*, I ſhall or will
Plur. *Bouillirons*, *bouillirez*, *bouilliront*. boil.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Bouillirois*, *bouillirois*, *bouilliroit*, I ſhould, would, or could, boil.
Plur. *Bouillirions*, *bouilliriez*, *bouilliroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Bous*, *bouille*, boil thou.
Plur. *Bouillons*, *bouillez*, *bouillent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Bouille*, *bouilles*, *bouille*, that I may boil.
Plur. *Bouillions*, *bouilliez*, *bouillent*,

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Bouilliſſe, bouilliſſes, bouillît,* I might boil.
Plur. *Bouilliſſions, bouilliſſiez, bouilliſſent.*

This verb, as well as its compound *rebouillir,* to boil again, is but ſeldom uſed, except in the third perſon ſingular or plural, and its infinitive mood, which is commonly joined to the verb *faire:* ex.

Faites *bouillir cette viande,* boil that meat.

COURIR, TO RUN.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Courir,* to run.
Part. act. *Courant,* running.
Part. paſſ. *Couru,* run.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Cours, cours, court,* I run, or am running.
Plur. *Courons, courez, courent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Courois, courois, couroit,* I did run, or was run-
Plur. *Courions, couriez, couroient.* ning.

Preterite.

Sing. *Courus, courus, courut,* I ran, or did run.
Plur. *Courûmes, courûtes, coururent.*

Future.

Sing. *Courrai, courras, courra,* I ſhall or will run.
Plur. *Courrons, courrez, courront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Courrois, courrois, courroit,* I ſhould, would, or
Plur. *Courrions, courriez, courroient,* could, run.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Cours, coure,* run thou.
Plur. *Courons, courez, courent.*

SUB-

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Coure,*	*coures,*	*coure,*	that I may run.
Plur.	*Courions,*	*couriez,*	*courent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Couruſſe,*	*couruſſes,*	*courût,*	I might run.
Plur.	*Couruſſions,*	*couruſſiez,*	*couruſſent.*	

The compounds of this verb are:

Accourir, to run to.
Concourir, to concur.
Diſcourir, to diſcourſe.
Encourir, to incur.
Parcourir, to run over.
Recourir, to have recourſe to.
Secourir, to ſuccour, to aſſiſt.

COUVRIR, TO COVER.

See *OUVRIR,* TO OPEN.

CUEILLIR, TO GATHER.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Cueillir,* to gather.
Part. act. *Cueillant,* gathering.
Part. paſſ. *Cueilli,* gathered.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Cueille, cueilles, cueille,* I gather, or am gathering.
Plur. *Cueillons, cueillez, cueillent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Cueillois, cueillois, cueilloit,* I did gather, or was gathering.
Plur. *Cueillions, cueilliez, cueilloient.*

Preterite.

Preterite.

Sing. *Cueillis, cueillis, cueillit,* I gathered, or did
Plur. *Cueillîmes, cueillîtes, cueillirent,* gather.

Future.

Sing. *Cueillerai, cueilleras, cueillera,* I ſhall or will
Plur. *Cueillerons, cueillerez, cueilleront.* gather.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Cueillerois, cueillerois, cueilleroit,* I ſhould, would, or could, gather.
Plur. *Cueillerions, cueilleriez, cueilleroient.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing. *Cueilles, cueille,* gather thou.
Plur. *Cueillons, cueillez, cueillent.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Cueille, cueilles, cueille,* that I may gather.
Plur. *Cueillions, cueilliez, cueillent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Cueilliſſe, cueilliſſes, cueillît,* that I might ga-
Plur. *Cueilliſſions, cueilliſſiez, cueilliſſent.* ther.

The compounds of this verb are,

Accueillir, to make welcome. (Very little uſed.)

Recueillir, to gather together.

DORMIR, to sleep.

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent. *Dormir,* to ſleep.
Part. act. *Dormant,* ſleeping.
Part. paſſ. *Dormi,* ſlept.

Indica-

Indicative Mood.

Preſent.

Sing. *Dors, dors, dort,* I ſleep, or am ſleeping.
Plur. *Dormons, dormez, dorment.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Dormois, dormois, dormoit,* I did ſleep, or was
Plur. *Dormions, dormiez, dormoient.* ſleeping.

Preterite.

Sing. *Dormis, dormis, dormit,* I ſlept, or did ſleep.
Plur. *Dormîmes, dormîtes, dormirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Dormirai, dormiras, dormira,* I ſhall or will
Plur. *Dormirons, dormirez, dormiront.* ſleep.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Dormirois, dormirois, dormiroit,* I would, could, or ſhould, ſleep.
Plur. *Dormirions, dormiriez, dormiroient.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing. *Dors, dorme,* ſleep thou.
Plur. *Dormons, dormez, dorment.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Dorme, dormes, dorme,* that I may ſleep.
Plur. *Dormions, dormiez, dorment.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Dormiſſe, dormiſſes, dormît,* that I might ſleep.
Plur. *Dormiſſions, dormiſſiez, dormiſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,

Endormir, to make ſleep.
S'endormir, to fall aſleep.
Se rendormir, to fall aſleep again.

EXERCISES

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING VERBS AND THEIR COMPOUNDS.

Where are you going? —— I am going to the
Où, adv.

play. —— I would go with you if I had time. — Why
comédie, f.

are they going away ſo ſoon? — Will not your father
tôt, adv.

be angry if you go there without him? — We were
fâché, adj.

going to Miſs D——'s when we met you. —
chez, p. *rencontrer*, v.

Theſe men went yeſterday from houſe to houſe. ——
en, p.

Believe me, ſir, do not go to ſee them. — Your fa-
Croire, v. *voir*, v.

ther told me you will go to France and Italy as ſoon
dire, v.

as war (is over.) — My ſiſter and I went laſt
ſera finie. *dernier*, adj.

Wedneſday to Ranelagh. —— If you had gone (there)

an hour ſooner you would have heard fine muſic.
plutôt, adv. *entendre*, v.

— Your uncle has acquired a great name in Ameri-
nom, m.

ca. — Go and fetch me the letter I left in my room.
laiſſer, v.

— Boil this chicken and roaſt that gooſe. — At laſt
poulet, m. *rôtir*, v. *oie*, f. *Enfin*, adv.

we have conquered. — This water will ſoon boil.
bientôt, adv.

— Boil that meat again, it is not done enough. —
cuit, p. p.

Do

Do not run ſo faſt, you will be tired. —— They al-
vite, adv. *fatigué*, p. p.

ways run when the go to ſee their aunt. — Your bro-
tante, f.

ther runs faſter than I. —— Let us not diſcourſe any
vîte, adv.

more on that ſubject. — I would aſſiſt him with all my
ſujet, m. *de*

heart if I could. —— This gentleman is a great tra-
pouvoir, v. *vo-*

veller, he has run over all Europe. — If you do
yageur, m. *faire*, v.

it you will incur your father's diſpleaſure. —— That
déplaiſir, m.

would concur to the public good. —— For whom are
bien, m.

you gathering thoſe charming flowers? — I gather them
fleur, f.

for my mother. — Why do they not gather ſome roſes?
roſe, f.

— Mrs. P. would have gathered ſome, but the garden-
jardi-

er told her he would gather them himſelf. —— Do
nier, m.

not make any noiſe, for my ſiſter is aſleep. —— I
faire, v. *car*, c.

hope ſhe will ſleep better to-night. — She would ſleep
ce ſoir, m.

much better if ſhe were in her bed. —— If I do not
lit, m.

walk a little I ſhall fall aſleep. — My mother,
ſe promener, v.

ſiſter, brother, and I, went yeſterday to Croydon to
hier, adv.

ſee

ſee Miſs H——. —Did you go there on foot
mademoiſelle, f. *à*

—No, my mother and ſiſter went in a coach, and
en, p.

my brother and I on horſeback.
à cheval, m.

FUIR, TO RUN AWAY, TO SHUN, TO AVOID, TO FLY, OR FLEE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Fuir*, to fly.
Part. act. *Fuyant*, flying.
Part. paſſ. *Fui*, fled.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Fuis*, *fuis*, *fuit*, I fly,
Plur. *Fuyons*, *fuyez*, *fuient*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Fuyois*, *fuyois*, *fuyoit*, I fled, or did fly.
Plur. *Fuyions*, *fuyiez*, *fuyoient*.

Preterite.

This tenſe is conjugated with the verb *prendre* and the ſubſtantive *fuite*: ex.

Je pris *la* fuite, I *fled*, or *ran away*, &c.

Future.

Sing. *Fuirai*, *fuiras*, *fuira*, I ſhall or will fly.
Plur. *Fuirons*, *fuirez*, *fuiront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Fuirois*, *fuirois*, *fuiroit*, I ſhould, would, or
Plur. *Fuirions*, *fuiriez*, *fuiroient*. could, fly.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Fuis*, *fuye*, fly thou.
Plur. *Fuyons*, *fuyez*, *fuient*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Fuye fuyes, fuye*, that I may fly.
Plur. *Fuyions, fuyiez, fuient.*

Imperfect.

Je priſſe *la* fuite, &c. I *might fly.*

MENTIR, TO LIE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Mentir*, to lie.
Part. act. *Mentant*, lying.
Part. paſſ. *Menti*, lied.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Mens, mens, ment*, I lie.
Plur. *Mentons, mentez, mentent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Mentois, mentois, mentoit*, I did lie, or was lying.
Plur. *Mentions, mentiez, mentoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Mentis, mentis, mentit*, I lied, or did lie.
Plur. *Mentimes, mentites, mentirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Mentirai, mentiras, mentira*, I ſhall or will lie.
Plur. *Mentirons, mentirez, mentiront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Mentirois, mentirois, mentiroit*, I would, could, or ſhould, lie.
Plur. *Mentirions, mentiriez, mentiroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Mens, mente*, lie thou.
Plu. *Mentons, mentez, mentent.*

SUB-

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Mente,*	*mentes*	*mente,*	that I may lie.
Plur.	*Mentions,*	*mentiez,*	*mentent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Mentiſſe,*	*mentiſſes,*	*mentît,*	that I might lie.
Plur.	*Mentiſſions,*	*mentiſſiez,*	*mentiſſent.*	

The compound of this verb is

Dementir, to give one the lie, to belie, to contradict.

MOURIR, TO DIE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Mourir,* to die.
Part. act. *Mourant,* dying.
Part. paſſ. *Mort,* died.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing.	*Meurs,*	*meurs,*	*meurt,*	I die, or am dying.
Plur.	*Mourons,*	*mourez,*	*meurent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Mourois,*	*mourois,*	*mouroit,*	I was dying.
Plur.	*Mourions,*	*mouriez,*	*mouroient.*	

Preterite.

Sing.	*Mourus,*	*mourus,*	*mourut,*	I died.
Plur.	*Mourûmes,*	*mourûtes,*	*moururent.*	

Future.

Sing.	*Mourrai,*	*mourras,*	*mourra,*	I ſhall or will die.
Plur.	*Mourrons,*	*mourrez,*	*mourront.*	

Conditional preſent.

Sing.	*Mourrois,*	*mourrois,*	*mourroit,*	I ſhould, could, or would, die.
Plur.	*Mourrions,*	*mourriez,*	*mourroient.*	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Meurs, meure,* die thou.
Plur. *Mourons, meurez, meurent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Meure, meures, meure,* that I may die.
Plur. *Mourions, mouriez, meurent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Mouruſſe, mouruſſes, mourût,* that I might die.
Plur. *Mouruſſions, mouruſſiez, mouruſſent.*

Se mourir, to be dying.

OFFRIR, TO OFFER.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Offrir,* to offer.
Part. act. *Offrant,* offering.
Part paſſ. *Offert,* offered.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Offre, offres, offre,* I offer, or am offering.
Plur. *Offrons, offrez, offrent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Offrois, offrois, offroit,* I did offer, or was offer-
Plur. *Offrions, offriez, offroient.* ing.

Preterite.

Sing. *Offris, offris, offrit,* I offered, or did offer.
Plur. *Offrimes, offrites, offrirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Offrirai, offriras, offrira,* I ſhall or will offer.
Plur. *Offrirons, offrirez, offriront.*

Conditional

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Offrirois, offrirois, offriroit,* I would, could, or ſhould, offer.

Plur. *Offririons, offririez, offriroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Offres, offre,* offer thou.
Plur. *Offrons, offrez, offrent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Offre,*	*offres,*	*offre,*	that I may offer.
Plur.	*Offrions,*	*offriez,*	*offrent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing. *Offriſſe, offriſſes, offrit,* that I might offer.
Plur. *Offriſſions, offriſſiez, offriſſent.*

OUIR, TO HEAR.

This verb is never uſed but in its participle paſſive joined to ſome of the tenſes of the verb *avoir,* to have, preceding the verb *dire,* to ſay: ex.

J'ai ouï dire *que,* I *have heard* that, &c.

In general we make uſe of *apprendre.*

OUVRIR, TO OPEN.

This verb, as well as its compounds,

Couvrir, to cover, *Recouvrir,* to cover again,
Découvrir, { to diſcover, to uncover,

is conjugated like *OFFRIR.*

PARTIR, TO SET OUT, TO GO AWAY;

And its compounds,

Départir, to depart, to impart;
Repartir, to ſet out again, to reply;

Se REPENTIR, TO REPENT;

SENTIR, TO FEEL, TO SMELL;

And its compounds,

Conſentir, to conſent, to agree;
Reſſentir, to be ſenſible of, to reſent;
Preſſentir, to have a foreſight of;

are conjugated like *MENTIR*.

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING VERBS AND THEIR COMPOUNDS.

As ſoon as they ſaw us coming they ran away. — Avoid bad company. — He does not love your ſiſter becauſe ſhe lies. — If you forgive me this time I never will lie any more. — I cannot believe him; for, he contradicts himſelf at every inſtant. — Tell me what ſhe has done to you; but, above all, do not lie. — If you do not behave better your mother will die with grief. — Mrs. S. died at Paris on the ſeventh of

voir, v. *venir*, v. *compagnie*, f. *parceque*, c. *fois*, f. *pouvoir*, v. *car*, c. *inſtant*, m. *Dire*, v. *ſur*, p. *ſe comporter*, v. *de chagrin*, m *à*

of Auguſt, one thouſand ſeven hundred and eighty.—
Août,m.

Were I in your place I would not offer her any money.
à *place*,f.

—Why do you not open your ſiſter the door?
Pourquoi,adv. *porte*,f.

— Your brother was no ſooner arrived in London
plutôt,v. *à*

than I offered him my ſervices. — Open the window.
fenêtre,f.

—I had heard you were going to Holland at the be-
com-

ginning of next month.— I hope you will ne-
mencement,m. *eſpérer*,v.

ver diſcover what I have told you.— Cover my hat
dire,v.

and put it upon that chair.—I will ſet out to-mor-
mettre,v. *chaiſe*,f.

row morning at ſeven (o'clock.) — Do not ſet out
heure,f.

without me. — Your ſiſter repents much for having
de

ſold her books. — Gather that pink, it ſmells char-
œillet,m.

mingly. — Her mother ſays ſhe never will conſent to
bon,adv.

it. — If you do not take care, you will repent of
prendre,v. *garde*,f.

your imprudence ſoon or late. — I ſhould die ſatiſ-
tôt,adv. *tard*,adv. *con-*

fied if I knew you were happy. — You ſoon
tent,adj. *ſavoir*,v. (by the ſubj.)

felt the effect of it. — My couſin ſet out from here
effet,m. *ici*,adv.

yeſterday

yeſterday morning at nine o'clock. — I offer you my

houſe, it is at your ſervice. — You may rely
maiſon, f. *pouvoir*, v. *compter*, v.

upon her, ſhe never will diſcover your ſecrets. — I ne-
ſecret, m.

ver will offer you my horſe any more. — He will
cheval, m.

feel it in his turn, when he (is) old.
à tour, m. (by the fut.)

SERVIR, TO SERVE, TO HELP ONE TO.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Servir*, to ſerve.
Part. act. *Servant*, ſerving.
Part. paſſ. *Servi*, ſerved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Sers*, *ſers*, *ſert*, I ſerve, or am ſerving.
Plur. *Servons*, *ſervez*, *ſervent*,

Imperfect.

Sing. *Servois*, *ſervois*, *ſervoit*, I did ſerve, or was
Plur. *Servions*, *ſerviez*, *ſervoient*. ſerving.

Preterite.

Sing. *Servis*, *ſervis*, *ſervit*, I did ſerve, or ſerved.
Plur. *Servîmes*, *ſervîtes*, *ſervirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Servirai*, *ſerviras*, *ſervira*, I ſhall or will ſerve.
Plur. *Servirons*, *ſervirez*, *ſerviront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Servirois*, *ſervirois*, *ſerviroit*, I would, ſhould, or could, ſerve.
Plur. *Servirions*, *ſerviriez*, *ſerviroient*.

IMPE-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Sers, ſerve,* ſerve thou.
Plur. *Servons, ſervez, ſervent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Serue, ſerves, ſerve,* that I may ſerve.
Plur. *Servions, ſerviez, ſervent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Serviſſe, ſerviſſes, ſervît,* that I might ſerve.
Plur. *Serviſſions, ſerviſſiez, ſerviſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,

Deſſervir, to do an ill office, to clear a table.
Se ſervir, to make uſe of, to uſe.

SORTIR, TO GO OUT,
is conjugated like *MENTIR.*

SOUFFRIR, TO SUFFER,
is conjugated like *OFFRIR.*

TENIR, TO HOLD.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Tenir,* to hold.
Part. act. *Tenant,* holding.
Part. paſſ. *Tenu,* held.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Tiens, tiens, tient,* I hold, or am holding.
Plur. *Tenons, tenez, tiennent,*

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Tenois, tenois tenoit*, I did hold, or was holding.
Plur. *Tenions, teniez, tenoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Tins, tins, tint*, I held, or did hold.
Plur. *Tînmes, tîntes, tinrent.*

Future.

Sing. *Tiendrai, tiendras, tiendra*, I ſhall or will hold.
Plur. *Tiendrons, tiendrez, tiendront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Tiendrois, tiendrois, tiendroit*, I ſhould, could, or would, hold.
Plur. *Tiendrions, tiendriez, tiendroient.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing. *Tiens, tienne*, hold thou.
Plur. *Tenons, tenez, tiennent.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Tienne,*	*tiennes,*	*tienne,*	that I may hold.
Plur.	*Tenions,*	*teniez,*	*tiennent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing. *Tinſſe, tinſſes, tint*, that I might hold.
Plur. *Tinſſions, tinſſiez, tinſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,

S'abſtenir, to abſtain.
Appartenir, to belong.
Contenir, to contain.
Detenir, to detain.
Entretenir, to keep, to entertain.
Maintenir, to maintain.
Obtenir, to obtain.
Retenir, to retain, to keep.
Soutenir, to maintain, to hold, to ſupport.

TRES-

TRESSAILLIR, TO START, TO LEAP FOR.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Treſſaillir*, to ſtart.
Part. act. *Treſſaillant*, ſtarting.
Part. paſſ. *Treſſailli*, ſtarted.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Treſſaille*, *treſſailles*, *treſſaille*, I ſtart.
Plur. *Treſſaillons*, *treſſaillez*, *treſſaillent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Treſſaillois*, *treſſaillois*, *treſſailloit*, I did ſtart.
Plur. *Treſſaillions*, *treſſailliez*, *treſſailloient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Treſſaillis*, *treſſaillis*, *treſſaillit*, I ſtarted.
Plur. *Treſſaillimes*, *treſſaillites*, *treſſaillirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Treſſaillirai*, *treſſailliras*, *treſſaillira*, I ſhall or will ſtart.
Plur. *Treſſaillirons*, *treſſaillirez*, *treſſailliront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Treſſaillirois*, *treſſaillirois*, *treſſailliroit*, I ſhould, would, &c. ſtart.
Plur. *Treſſaillirions*, *treſſailliriez*, *treſſailliroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD is wanting.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Treſſaille*, *treſſailles*, *treſſaille*, that I may ſtart.
Plur. *Treſſaillions*, *treſſailliez*, *treſſaillent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Treſſailliſſe*, *treſſailliſſes*, *treſſaillit*, that I might ſtart.
Plur. *Treſſailliſſions*, *treſſailliſſiez*, *treſſailliſſent*.

SAILIR,

SAILIR, TO JUT, TO JET OUT, (term in architecture,) is conjugated a *TRESSAILLIR*, but is only uſed in the third perſon of ſome tenſes and its infinitive mood.

ASSAILLIR, TO ASSAULT, is conjugated as above.

N. B. *SAILLIR*, TO GUSH OUT, (ſpeaking of any liquids,) is regular, and conjugated as *PUNIR*.

VENIR, TO COME,

And its compounds,

Convenir, to agree, to become, to fit, to ſuit,
Contrevenir, to infringe,
Devenir, to become,
Diſconvenir, to diſagree,
Intervenir, to intervene,
Parvenir, to attain to,
Prévenir, to prevent, to prejudice, to anticipate, to prepoſſeſs,
Provenir, to proceed,
Revenir, to come back, to return,
Se ſouvenir, to remember, to remind,*
Se reſſouvenir, to recollect,
Subvenir, to relieve, to aſſiſt,
Survenir, to befal, to happen unexpectedly, to come to,

Are conjugated like *TENIR*.

VETIR, TO CLOTHE.

This verb is ſeldom uſed but in the preſent of the infinitive mood, and participle paſſive, *vêtu*, clothed; therefore the conjugation of its compound *REVETIR*, TO INVEST WITH, will be given in lieu of it.

* When this verb, in Engliſh, governs a noun or pronoun in the accuſative caſe, it muſt be put in the infinitive mood, and preceded by the verb *faire* in the ſame tenſe, number, and perſon, as the verb *to remind*: ex.

Faites-*moi* ſouvenir *de paſſer chez votre tante*, — *Remind* me to call upon your aunt.
Oui, je vous en ferai ſouvenir, — Yes, I will *remind* you of it.

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent. *Revêtir*, to inveſt.
Part. act. *Revêtant*, inveſting.
Part. paſſ. *Revêtu*, inveſted.

Indicative Mood.

Preſent.

Sing. *Revêts*, *revêts*, *revêt*, I inveſt.
Plur. *Revêtons*, *revêtez*, *revêtent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Revêtois*, *revêtois*, *revêtoit*, I did inveſt.
Plur. *Revêtions*, *revêtiez*, *revêtoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Revêtis*, *revêtis*, *revêtit*, I inveſted, or did
Plur. *Revêtîmes*, *revêtîtes*, *revêtirent*. inveſt.

Future.

Sing. *Revêtirai*, *revêtiras*, *revêtira*, I ſhall or will
Plur. *Revêtirons*, *revêtirez*, *revêtiront*. inveſt.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Revêtirois*, *revêtirois*, *revêtiroit*, I ſhould, would, &c. inveſt.
Plur. *Revêtirions*, *revêtiriez*, *revêtiroient*.

Imperative Mood.

Sing. *Revêts*, *revête*, inveſt thou.
Plur. *Revêtons*, *revêtez*, *revêtent*.

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Revête*, *revêtes*, *revête*, that I may inveſt.
Plur. *Revêtions*, *revêtiez*, *revêtent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Revêtiſſe*, *revêtiſſes*, *revêtît*, that I might in-
Plur. *Revêtiſſions*, *revêtiſſiez*, *revêtiſſent*. veſt.

EXERCISES UPON THE FOREGOING VERBS AND THEIR COMPOUNDS.

Your friend, Mr. A——, does not ſerve me well.
ami,m.

—Shall I help you to a little bit of lamb? —
morceau,m. *agneau*,m.

We would ſerve him with all our heart if we could. —
pouvoir,v.

I ſhall go out in half an hour.—If we go to-day
aujourd'hui,adv.

to Richmond we will make uſe of your coach. — My
caroſſe,m.

ſiſter went out this morning at nine o'clock and is not
matin,m.

yet returned.—Nobody knows what we ſuffered in our
ſavoir,v.

laſt voyage. — If I were as ill as you I would
voyage,m. *malade*,adj.

not go out of my room. —Why do not you
chambre,f. *Pourquoi*,adv.

ſerve your friends, ſince you may do it?— The
puiſque,c. *pouvoir*,v.

more we are above others, the more it becomes
au-deſſus de,p.

us to be modeſt and humble.—My aunt and I came
tante,f.

yeſterday to ſee you, but you were not at home.—
voir,v. *logis*,m.

I hope you will keep your word and come to-
eſpérer,v. *parole*,f. *de-*

morrow. — I aſſure you Mr. R——'s father holds
main,adv. *aſſurer*,v.

the

the firſt rank in the town. — We were coming to
rang,m. *ville*,f.

ſee you, but you have anticipated all my deſigns. —

She leapt for joy when ſhe ſaw her. — At laſt ſhe has
de *Enfin*,adv. *

agreed to pay her an annual penſion of twenty pounds.
de

—Come on Friday morning at nine o'clock. —
Vendredi,m.

This houſe will belong to me after her death.—You
après,p. *mort*,f.

will obtain leave to go out another time if you
permiſſion,f. *de* *fois*,f.

come back ſoon. — This box contains all my jew-
bientôt,adv. *boite*,f. *bi-*

els. — I agree Miſs N. is the prettieſt of the family.
joux,m.pl.

— Who knows whether they will remember it or
ſavoir,v. *ſi*,c.

not? — Your illneſs proceeds from a great heat. —
maladie,f. *chaleur*,f.

The firſt time you come to ſee me I will keep
(by the fut.) *voir*,v.

you two or three days. — Mr. B. deſired me to tell you
jour,m. *prier*,v. *de*

that he will not come back to-day. — We would cer-
cer-

tainly have come back yeſterday had we had
tainement,adv. * *hier*,adv.

time. — You will become a great man if you conti-
grand,adj. *conti-*

nue to ſtudy with the ſame aſſiduity. — He would
nuer,v. *de* *aſſiduité*,f.

* See the neuter verbs for the formation of the compound tenſes.

have come to ſee us laſt week if it had not rained. —
* *ſemaine*,f. *plu*,p.p.

The firſt time I go out, remind me to call on
fois,f. (by the fut.) *de paſſer*,v. *chez*,p.

your brother. — Do not go out to-day, you will ſuffer

much if you do. —I ſhould not ſuffer (ſo much)
beaucoup,adv. *faire*,v. *tant*,adv.

if it were fine weather. — Why do not you abſtain
faiſoit

from drinking. — You may ſet out this morning,
boire,v. *pouvoir*,v.

but remember to come back at night. — Were I in
de *ce ſoir*,m.

your place I would detain him here a little longer. —
place,f. *long-tems*,adv.

I do not think that colour ſuits your ſiſter. — When
croire,v. *Quand*,adv.

will ſhe return from the country? — She wrote ſhe
campagne,f.

would come next Saturday if the weather were fine.
tems,m.

VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

ASSEOIR, TO SIT DOWN.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Aſſeoir*, to ſit down.
Part. act. *Aſſeyant*, ſitting down.
Part. paſſ. *Aſſis*, ſat down (or ſeated).

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Aſſieds*, *aſſieds*, *aſſied*, I ſit down.
Plur. *Aſſeyons*, *aſſeyez*, *aſſeyent*.

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Aſſeyois, aſſeyois, aſſeyoit,* I did ſit, or was ſitting,
Plur. *Aſſeyions, aſſeyiez, aſſeyoient.* down.

Preterite.

Sing. *Aſſis, aſſis, aſſit,* I ſat down.
Plur. *Aſsîmes, aſsîtes, aſſirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Aſſeyerai, aſſeyeras, aſſeyera,* I ſhall or will ſit
Plur. *Aſſeyerons, aſſeyerez, aſſeyeront.* down.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Aſſeyerois, aſſeyerois, aſſeyeroit,* I ſhould, would, or could, ſit down.
Plur. *Aſſeyerions, aſſeyeriez, aſſeyeroient.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing. *Aſſieds, aſſeye,* ſit down.
Plur. *Aſſeyons, aſſeyez, aſſeyent*

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Aſſeye,*	*aſſeyes,*	*aſſeye,*	that I may ſit down.
Plur.	*Aſſeyions,*	*aſſeyiez,*	*aſſeyent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing. *Aſſiſſe, aſſiſſes, aſsît,* that I might ſit down.
Plur. *Aſſiſſions, aſſiſſiez, aſſiſſent.*

The compound of this verb is
Se raſſeoir, to ſit down again.

SEOIR, TO FIT WELL, TO BECOME, TO SIT, the primitive of *aſſeoir,* is never uſed in the preſent of its infinitive mood; and in its other tenſes is conjugated as follows:

Part. act. *Séant,* fitting well, fitting, or becoming.
Part. paſſ. *Sis,* never uſed but in the ſenſe of ſituated, or lying.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Il ſied, ils ſiéent,* It becomes, they become, &c.
Imperfect. *Il ſéyoit, ils ſéyoient,* It was becoming, &c.
Preterite wanting.
Future. *Il ſiéra, ils ſiéront,* It or they will become.
Cond. preſ. *Il ſiéroit, ils ſiéroient,* It or they would become.

The other tenſes are never uſed.

SURSEOIR, TO SUPERSEDE, TO PUT OFF, a compound of *ſeoir,* is only uſed in law, and is thus conjugated:

Part. act. *Surſoyant.*
Part. paſſ. *Surſis.*

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Je ſurſois, &c. nous ſurſoyons.

Imperfect.

Je ſurſoyois, &c. nous ſurſoyions, &c.

Preterite.

Je ſurſis, &c. nous ſurſîmes, &c.

Future.

Je ſurſeoirai, &c. nous ſurſeoirons, &c.

Conditional preſent.

Je ſurſeoirois, &c. nous ſurſeoirions, &c.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Surſois, &c. ſurſoyons, &c.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que je ſurſeoye, &c. que nous ſurſoyions, &c.

Imperfect.

Que je ſurſiſſe, &c. que nous ſurſiſſions, &c.

DECHOIR,

DECHOIR, TO DECAY, TO DECLINE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Déchoir*, to decay.
Part. act. wanting.
Part. paſſ. *Déchu*, decayed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Déchois*, *déchois* *déchoit*, I decay.
Plur. *Déchoyons*, *dechoyez*, *déchoient*.

Imperfect is wanting.

Preterite.

Sing. *Déchus*, *déchus*, *déchut*, I decayed, or did de-
Plur. *Déchûmes*, *déchûtes*, *déchurent*. cay.

Future.

Sing. *Décherrai*, *décherras*, *décherra*, I ſhall or will
Plur. *Décherrons*, *décherrez*, *décherront*. decay.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Décherrois*, *décherrois*, *décherroit*, I ſhould, would, or could, decay.
Plur. *Décherrions*, *décherriez*, *décherroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD is wanting.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Déchoie*, *déchoies*, *déchoie*, that I may decay.
Plur. *Déchoyions*, *déchoyiez*, *déchoient*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Déchuſſe*, *déchuſſes*, *déchût*, that I might decay.
Plur. *Déchuſſions*, *déchuſſiez*, *déchuſſent*.

CHOIR, the primitive of the above verb, is obſolete.

ECHOIR, TO FALL OUT, TO CHANCE, is conjugated like *DECHOIR*. Its part. act. is *échéant*.

MOU-

MOUVOIR, TO MOVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Mouvoir*, to move.
Part. act. *Mouvant*, moving.
Part. paſſ. *Mu*, moved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Meus*, *meus*, *meut*, I move.
Plur. *Mouvons*, *mouvez*, *meuvent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Mouvois*, *mouvois*, *mouvoit*, I did move.
Plur. *Mouvions*, *mouviez*, *mouvoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Mus*, *mus*, *mut*, I moved, or did move.
Plur. *Mûmes*, *mûtes*, *murent*.

Future.

Sing. *Mouvrai*, *mouvras*, *mouvra*, I ſhall or will
Plur. *Mouvrons*, *mouvrez*, *mouvront*. move.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Mouvrois*, *mouvrois*, *mouvroit*, I ſhould, could, or would, move.
Plur. *Mouvrions*, *mouvriez*, *mouvroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Meus*, *meuve*, move thou.
Plur. *Mouvons*, *mouvez*, *meuvent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Meuve*, *meuves*, *meuve*, that I may move.
Plur. *Mouvions*, *mouviez*, *meuvent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Muſſe*, *muſſes*, *mût*, that I might move.
Plur. *Muſſions*, *muſſiez*, *muſſent*.

The compound of this verb is
Emouvoir, to ſtir up, to move.

POU-

POUVOIR, TO BE ABLE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Pouvoir*, to be able.
Part. act. *Pouvant*, being able.
Part. paſſ. *Pu*, been able.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Puis*, or *peux*, *peux*, *peut*, I am able, I can
Plur. *Pouvons*, *pouvez*, *peuvent*. or may.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Pouvois*, *pouvois*, *pouvoit*, I was able, or I could.
Plur. *Pouvions*, *pouviez*, *pouvoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Pus*, *pus*, *put*, I was able, or I could.
Plur. *Pûmes*, *pûtes*, *purent*.

Future.

Sing. *Pourrai*, *pourras*, *pourra*, I ſhall or will be
Plur. *Pourrons*, *pourrez*, *pourront*. able.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Pourrois*, *pourrois*, *pourroit*, I ſhould be able, I could or might.
Plur. *Pourrions*, *pourriez*, *pourroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD wanting.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Puiſſe*, *puiſſes*, *puiſſe*, that I may be able or
Plur. *Puiſſions*, *puiſſiez*, *puiſſent*. I may.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Puſſe*, *puſſes*, *pût*, that I might be able, or I
Plur. *Puſſions*, *puſſiez*, *puſſent*. might.

When the words *can*, *may*, *could*, or *might*, expreſs an abſolute or permiſſive power, or a poſſibility of doing

ing a thing, *can* and *may* are rendered by the preſent tenſe of the indicative of this verb: ex.

Je puis *vous vendre un bon cheval ſi vous en avez beſoin d'un,*	I *can* ſell you a good horſe if you want one.
Vous pouvez *aller au bal, mais revenez à dix heures,*	You *may* go to the ball, but come back at ten o'clock.

N. B. May, expreſſing a wiſh, is rendered by the preſent tenſe of the ſubjunctive: ex.

Puiſſiez-*vous être heureux*, *May* you be happy.

Could is rendered by one of the following tenſes, viz. the imperfect, preterite definite or indefinite, or conditional preſent; and *might* by the laſt tenſe: ex.

Je ne pouvois *pas mieux faire,*	I *could* not do better.
Il ne put *pas venir avec nous la ſemaine paſſée,*	He *could* not come with us laſt week.
Vous pourriez *vous tromper auſſi bien que lui,*	You *might* miſtake as well as he.

Could or *might*, being joined to the verb *to have*, immediately followed by a participle paſſive, muſt be rendered by the conditional paſt of the above verb, with the participle turned into the preſent of the infinitive mood: ex.

J'aurois pu vous le dire hier au ſoir,	I *could have* told it to you laſt night.
Vous auriez pu *le faire en trois jours,*	You *might have* done it in three days.

SAVOIR, TO KNOW *ſomething*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent.	*Savoir*, to know.
Part. act.	*Sachant*, knowing.
Part. paſſ.	*Su*, known.

INDICA-

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Sais, ſais, ſait,* I know.
Plur. *Savons, ſavez, ſavent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Savois, ſavois, ſavoit,* I did know, or knew.
Plur. *Savions, ſaviez, ſavoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Sus, ſus, ſut,* I knew, or did know.
Plur. *Sûmes, ſûtes, ſurent.*

Future.

Sing. *Saurai, ſauras, ſaura,* I ſhall or will know.
Plur. *Saurons, ſaurez, ſauront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Saurois,* ſaurois, ſauroit,* I ſhould, would, or could, know.
Plur. *Saurions, ſauriez, ſauroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Saches, ſache,* know thou.
Plur. *Sachons, ſachez, ſachent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Sache,†* *ſaches, ſache,* that I may know.
Plur. *Sachions, ſachiez, ſachent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Suſſe, ſuſſes, ſût,* that I might know.
Plur. *Suſſions, ſuſſiez, ſuſſent.*

* This tenſe, conjugated negatively, is often Engliſhed by *cannot:* ex.

Je ne ſaurois *vous le dire,* I *cannot* tell it to you.

† We ſometimes employ the preſent of the ſubjunctive of this verb inſtead of the indicative; but it is never to be uſed without the negation *pas,* and moſt commonly in anſwering a queſtion: ex.

Le roi ira-t-il à la comédie? Will the king go to the play?
Pas que je ſache, Not that I *know of.*

VALOIR,

VALOIR, TO BE WORTH.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Valoir*, to be worth.
Part. act. *Valant*, being worth.
Part. paſſ. *Valu*, been worth.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Vaux*, *vaux*, *vaut*, I am worth.
Plur. *Valons*, *valez*, *valent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Valois*, *valois*, *valoit*, I was worth.
Plur. *Valions*, *valiez*, *valoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Valus*, *valus*, *valut*, I was worth.
Plur. *Valûmes*, *valûtes*, *valurent*.

Future.

Sing. *Vaudrai*, *vaudras*, *vaudra*, I ſhall or will be
Plur. *Vaudrons*, *vaudrez*, *vaudront*. worth.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Vaudrois*, *vaudrois*, *vaudroit*, I ſhould, &c. be
Plur. *Vaudrions*, *vaudriez*, *vaudroient*. worth.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Vaux*, *vaille*, be thou worth.
Plur. *Valons*, *valez*, *vaillent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Vaille*, *vailles*, *vaille*, that I may be worth.
Plur. *Valions*, *valiez*, *vaillent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Valuſſe*, *valuſſes*, *valût*, that I might be worth.
Plur. *Valuſſions*, *valuſſiez*, *valuſſent*.

The

The compound of this verb is,

Prévaloir, to prevail, which is conjugated as *VALOIR*, but we ſay much better in the preſent tenſe of the ſubjunctive,

Que je préval-*e, es, e; ions, iez, ent.*

VOIR, TO SEE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Voir*, to ſee.
Part. act. *Voyant*, ſeeing.
Part. paſſ. *Vu*, ſeen.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Vois, vois, voit*, I ſee.
Plur. *Voyons, voyez, voient.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Voyois, voyois, voyoit*, I did ſee.
Plur. *Voyions, voyiez, voyoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Vis, vis, vit*, I ſaw, or did ſee.
Plur. *Vimes, vites, virent.*

Future.

Sing. *Verrai, verras, verra*, I ſhall or will ſee.
Plur. *Verrons, verrez, verront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Verrois, verrois, verroit*, I ſhould, &c. ſee.
Plur. *Verrions, verriez, verroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Vois, voie*, ſee thou.
Plur. *Voyons, voyez, voient.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Voie,*	*voies,*	*voie,*	that I may ſee.
Plur.	*Voyions,*	*voyiez,*	*voient.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Viſſe,*	*viſſes,*	*vît,*	I might ſee.
Plur.	*Viſſions,*	*viſſiez,*	*viſſent.*	

The compounds of this verb are,

Entrevoir, to have a glimpſe of. *Prévoir,* to foreſee.
Revoir, to ſee again. *Pourvoir,* to provide.

PREVOIR differs from *VOIR* in the future: ex.

Sing. *Prévoirai, prévoiras, prévoira.*
Plur. *Prévoirons, prévoirez, prévoiront.* And,

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Prévoirois, prévoirois, prévoiroit.*
Plur. *Prévoirions, prévoiriez, prévoiroient.*

POURVOIR makes in the preterite,

Sing. *Pourvus, pourvus, pourvut.*
Plur. *Pourvûmes, pourvûtes, pourvurent.*

Future.

Sing. *Pourvoirai, pourvoiras, pourvoira.*
Plur. *Pourvoirons, pourvoirez, pourvoiront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Pourvoirois, pourvoirois, pourvoiroit.*
Plur. *Pourvoirions, pourvoiriez, pourvoiroient.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Pourvuſſe, pourvuſſes, pourvût.*
Plur. *Pourvuſſions, pourvuſſiez, pourvuſſent.*

VOULOIR,

VOULOIR, TO BE WILLING.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Vouloir*, to be willing.
Part. act. *Voulant*, being willing.
Part paſſ. *Voulu*, been willing.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Veux*, *veux*, *veut*, I am willing, or I will.
Plur. *Voulons*, *voulez*, *veulent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Voulois*, *voulois*, *vouloit*, I was willing, or I
Plur. *Voulions*, *vouliez*, *vouloient*. would.

Preterite.

Sing. *Voulus*, *voulus*, *voulut*, I was willing, or I
Plur. *Voulûmes*, *voulûtes*, *voulurent*. would.

Future.

Sing. *Voudrai*, *voudras*, *voudra*, I ſhall be willing, or
Plur. *Voudrons*, *voudrez*, *voudront*. I will.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Voudrois*, *voudrois*, *voudroit*, I ſhould be willing, or I would.
Plur. *Voudrions*, *voudriez*, *voudroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD is wanting.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Veuille*, *veuilles*, *veuille*, that I may be willing.
Plur. *Voulions*, *vouliez*, *veuillent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Vouluſſe*, *vouluſſes*, *voulût*, that I might be
Plur. *Vouluſſions*, *vouluſſiez*, *vouluſſent*. willing.

When the words *will* or *would* expreſs a will, choice, or deliberation, in the agent, and can be turned by *chooſe*,

or *choſe*, *will* is rendered in French by the preſent of the indicative mood, or future of this verb: ex.

Je veux *y aller et lui parler moi-même*,	I *will*, or *chooſe* to, go there and ſpeak to him myſelf;
Il ne veut *pas manger*,	He *will* not eat, or does not *chooſe* to eat;

and *would* by one of the following tenſes, viz. the imperfect, preterite definite or indefinite, or conditional preſent: ex.

Si je voulois, *je vous dirois où elle demeure*,	If I *would*, or *choſe*, I could tell you where ſhe lives.
Il voulut *abſolument partir hier*,	He *would* abſolutely, or abſolutely *choſe* to, ſet out yeſterday.
Que voudriez-*vous que je fiſſe?*	What *would* you have me do?

When *would* is joined to the verb *to have*, immediately followed by a participle paſſive, they are to be rendered by the preterpluperfect or conditional paſt of the above verb, with the participle paſſive turned into the preſent of the infinitive mood: ex.

*Si j'*avois voulu *lui parler*,	If I *would have* ſpoken to him, or *had* I *choſen* to ſpeak to him.
*Vous n'*auriez *pas* voulu *prendre les armes, ſi, &c.*	You *would* not *have* taken up arms, if, &c.
Nous aurions pu l'arrêter ſi nous euſſions voulu,	We could have ſtopped him if we *would*, or *had choſen*.

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING VERBS AND THEIR COMPOUNDS.

Why do not you ſit down, ſir? —— You
Pourquoi, adv.

come to ſee me very ſeldom. —— Let us ſit down upon
rarement, adv.

the

the graſs. — Do not make (ſo much) noiſe, I cannot
herbe,f. *faire*, v. *tant*,adv.

learn my leſſon. — Do you know what has hap-
apprendre,v. *arri-*

pened to her? — As ſoon as he ſaw he could not
ver,v. *Auſſitôt que*, c.

make her hear reaſon, he went away. —— See the
entendre,v. *s'en aller*, v.

letter ſhe wrote me. —— We will not ſit down till
écrire,v. *que ne*

you have determined to ſet out. — The firſt time I ſaw
ſe déterminer,v. *à* *fois*,f.

your ſiſter ſhe pleaſed me. — I would ſit down upon
plaire,v.

the graſs if it were not ſo damp. —— Mrs. P. deſired
humide,adj. *prier*,v.

me to tell you ſhe could not come to ſee you this
dire,v.

week, but ſhe would certainly come at the be-
ſemaine,f. *certainement*,adv. *com-*

ginning of next month. — Cannot you lend me
mencement,m. *mois*, m. *prêter*,v.

three or four guineas? — If I would, I ſoon could
guinée, f. *bientôt*,adv.

know whether Mrs. D. has ſeen your aunt or not. —
ſi, c. *tante*,f.

This cloth is not worth five ſhillings a yard, but its
drap, m.

colour becomes you very well. — Do not you ſee the

defects of it? —— When you know your leſſon,
défaut,m. (by the fut.)

come and repeat it to me. — Did you not know that
répéter,v.

Mr. A. was to marry Miſs B.? — I knew it, but
épouſer,v. *mais*,c.
I was not willing to tell him of it. — I believe you
parler,v.
could learn your leſſons much better if you
apprendre,v. *beaucoup*,adv.
would. — Could you lend me your horſe for two or
prêter,v.
three days? — If your brother come with me, will he
jour,m. *avec*,p.
be able to follow me? — Could they ſee ſo great an
ſuivre,v.
alteration without being vexed (at it?) — He is
changement,m. *ſans*,p. *fâché*,p.p. *en*,pro.
incapable of commanding others who cannot command
himſelf. — His beſt coat was not worth two-pence
habit,m. *ſou*, m.
when he arrived from Germany. — We ſaw them yeſ-
Allemagne,f. *hi-*
terday. — They did not foreſee what would happen to
er, adv. *arriver*,v.
them. — Do you know where Miſs B. lives? — Yes,
où,adv. *demeurer*,v.
I do (know it,) and I ſee her every day at her window.
fenêtre, f.
— Why will you not tell it me? — She would marry
épouſer,v.
him in ſpite of all her relations. — It is for that
en,p. *dépit*,m. *parent*,m. *Ce*,pro.
reaſon her father ſays he will never ſee her again. —
dire,v.
All the fineſt talents reunited are not worth a virtue. —
Severity and rigour may excite fear, but not love. —
Sévérité,f. *rigueur*,f. *crainte*,f. *amour*,m.
You

You ſaw with what goodneſs ſhe received him. — I
bonté, f. *recevoir*, v.

would not tell her what I think about it, for fear of
de, p.

giving her any ſubject of complaint. — If you foreſee the
plainte, f.

danger, why do you not endeavour to avoid it? —
tâcher, v. *de éviter*, v.

They were willing to withdraw, but your brother
ſe retirer, v.

hindered them (from it) and deſired them to ſit down
empêcher, v. *prier*, v. *de*

again. — You can ſpeak to Mr. B. whenever you
parler, v. *quand*, adv.

pleaſe, but I may not take that liberty. — He
vouloir, v. *prendre*, v.

would not ſell me theſe buckles under four
vendre, v. *boucle*, f. *à moins de*, p.

guineas. — I will not ſee your brother (any more.) —
plus, adv.

Every body thinks that if they would have purſued
pourſuivre, v.

the enemy briſkly they might have ended the
vigoureuſement, adv. *finir*, v.

war on that day. — Should we ſee ourſelves reduced
réduire, v.

to ſo great difficulties? — If I would have believed
croire, v.

him, he would have perſuaded me to go to Italy with
de

him. — He could have done his work in leſs than
faire, v. *en*, p.

ten minutes if he had not amuſed himſelf in reading.
s'amuſer, v. *à lire*, v.

— If

—If you want that book you may take it, it is at
avoir beſoin de *à*
your ſervice. —— We might have danced till
juſqu'à, p.
(twelve o'clock) if that had not happened. — Oh! my
minuit, m.
children, may you be happy, and never bewail the
heureux, adj. *pleurer*, v.
moment of your birth! — I ſpoke to her (a long while,)
naiſſance, f. *longtems*, adv.
but could not perſuade her to come with me. — May
de
I go and ſee him? — Yes, but come back as ſoon as
auſſitôt que, c.
you (can.)
(by the fut.)

VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

ABSOUDRE, TO ABSOLVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Abſoudre*, to abſolve.
Part. act. *Abſolvant*, abſolving.
Part. paſſ. *Abſous*, abſolved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Abſous*, *abſous*, *abſout*, I abſolve.
Plur. *Abſolvons*, *abſolvez*, *abſolvent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Abſolvois*, *abſolvois*, *abſolvoit*, I did abſolve.
Plur. *Abſolvions*, *abſolviez*, *abſolvoient*.

Preterite is wanting.

Future.

Future.

Sing. *Abſoudrai, abſoudras, abſoudra,* I ſhall or will
Plur. *Abſoudrons, abſoudrez, abſoudront.* abſolve.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Abſoudrois, abſoudrois, abſoudroit,* I ſhould, &c.
Plur. *Abſoudrions, abſoudriez, abſoudroient.* abſolve.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Abſous, abſolve,* abſolve thou.
Plur. *Abſolvons, abſolvez, abſolvent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Abſolve, abſolves, abſolve,* that I may abſolve.
Plur. *Abſolvions, abſolviez, abſolvent.*

Imperfect is wanting.

SOUDRE, TO SOLVE, the primitive of this verb, is only uſed in the preſent tenſe of the infinitive mood.

The other compounds are,

Diſſoudre, to diſſolve. *Réſoudre,* to reſolve.

Diſſoudre has the ſame tenſes wanting as *abſoudre.*
Réſoudre has its participle paſſive, *réſolu:* its preterite,

Sing. *Réſolus, réſolus, réſolut.*
Plur. *Réſolûmes, réſolûtes, réſolurent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Réſoluſſe, réſoluſſes, réſolût.*
Plur. *Réſoluſſions, réſoluſſiez, réſoluſſent.*

ASTREINDRE, TO OBLIGE,
ATTEINDRE, TO REACH, TO HIT, TO ATTAIN,
and *AVEINDRE,* TO REACH, TO FETCH OUT,
are conjugated as *CRAINDRE.*

The three above verbs grow obſolete.

BATTRE,

BATTRE, TO BEAT.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Battre*, to beat.
Part. act. *Battant*, beating.
Part. paſſ. *Battu*, beaten.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Bats*, *bats*, *bat*, I beat, or am beating.
Plur. *Battons*, *battez*, *battent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Battois*, *battois*, *battoit*, I did beat, or was beat-
Plur. *Battions*, *battiez*, *battoient*. ing.

Preterite.

Sing. *Battis*, *battis*, *battit*, I did beat, or beat.
Plur. *Battimes*, *battites*, *battirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Battrai*, *battras*, *battra*, I ſhall or will beat.
Plur. *Battrons*, *battrez*, *battront*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Battrois*, *battrois*, *battroit*, I ſhould, &c. beat.
Plur. *Battrions*, *battriez*, *battroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Bats*, *batte*, beat thou.
Plur. *Battons*, *battez*, *battent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Batte*, *battes*, *batte*, that I may beat.
Plur. *Battions*, *battiez*, *battent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Battiſſe*, *battiſſes*, *battit*, that I might beat.
Plur. *Battiſſions*, *battiſſiez*, *battiſſent*.

The

The compounds of this verb are,

Abattre, to pull down.
Combattre, to fight.
Débattre, to debate, to ſtruggle.
Rabattre, to abate, to beat down.
Rebattre, to beat again.

BOIRE, TO DRINK.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Boire*, to drink.
Part. act. *Buvant*, drinking.
Part. paſſ. *Bu*, drunk.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Bois*, *bois*, *boit*, I drink, or am drinking.
Plur. *Buvons*, *buvez*, *boivent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Buvois*, *buvois*, *buvoit*, I did drink, or was
Plur. *Buvions*, *buviez*, *buvoient*. drinking.

Preterite.

Sing. *Bus*, *bus*, *but*, I drank, or did drink.
Plur. *Bûmes*, *bûtes*, *burent*.

Future.

Sing. *Boirai*, *boiras*, *boira*, I ſhall or will drink.
Plur. *Boirons*, *boirez*, *boiront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Boirois*, *boirois*, *boiroit*, I ſhould, &c. drink.
Plur. *Boirions*, *boiriez*, *boiroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Bois*, *boive*, drink thou.
Plur. *Buvons*, *buvez*, *boivent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Boive*, *boives*, *boive*, that I may drink.
Plur. *Buvions*, *buviez*, *boivent*.

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Buſſe, buſſes, bût*, that I might drink.
Plur. *Buſſions, buſſiez, buſſent.*

CEINDRE, TO GIRD,

And its compound, *Enceindre*, to incloſe, to encompaſs, are conjugated like *CRAINDRE.*

CIRCONCIRE, TO CIRCUMCISE,

Is conjugated like *CONFIRE*, but has its participle paſſive ending in *is* inſtead of *it.*

CONCLURE, TO CONCLUDE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Conclure*, to conclude.
Part. act. *Concluant*, concluding.
Part. paſſ. *Conclu*, concluded.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Conclus, conclus, conclut*, I conclude.
Plur. *Concluons, concluez, concluent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Concluois, concluois, concluoit*, I did conclude.
Plur. *Concluions, concluiez, concluoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Conclus, conclus, conclut*, I did conclude, or
Plur. *Conclûmes, conclûtes, conclurent.* concluded.

Future.

Sing. *Conclurai, concluras, conclura*, I ſhall or will
Plur. *Conclurons, concluret, concluront.* conclude.

Conditional

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Conclurois, conclurois, concluroit,* I ſhould, &c. conclude.

Plur. *Conclurions, concluriez, concluroient.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing. *Conclus, conclue,* conclude thou.
Plur. *Concluons, concluez, concluent.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Conclue, conclues, conclue,* that I may conclude.
Plur. *Concluions, concluiez, concluent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Concluſſe, concluſſes, conclût,* that I might con-
Plur. *Concluſſions, concluſſiez, concluſſent.* clude.

CONDUIRE, to conduct, to lead, to carry.

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent. *Conduire,* to conduct.
Part. act. *Conduiſant,* conducting.
Part. paſſ. *Conduit,* conducted.

Indicative Mood.

Preſent.

Sing. *Conduis, conduis, conduit,* I lead, &c.
Plur. *Conduiſons, conduiſez, conduiſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Conduiſois, conduiſois, conduiſoit,* I did lead.
Plur. *Conduiſions, conduiſiez, conduiſoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Conduiſis, conduiſis, conduiſit,* I led.
Plur. *Conduiſimes, conduiſites, conduiſirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Conduirai, conduiras, conduira,* I ſhall or will
Plur. *Conduirons, conduirez, conduiront.* lead.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Conduirois, conduirois, conduiroit,* I ſhould, &c.
Plur. *Conduirions, conduiriez, conduiroient.* lead.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Conduis, conduiſe,* lead thou.
Plur. *Conduiſons, conduiſez, conduiſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Conduiſe, conduiſes, conduiſe,* that I may lead.
Plur. *Conduiſions, conduiſiez, conduiſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Conduiſiſſe, conduiſiſſes, conduiſît,* that I might
Plur. *Conduiſiſſions, conduiſiſſiez, conduiſiſſent.* lead.

Its compound is,
Reconduire, to lead again.

CONFIRE, TO PRESERVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Confire,* to preſerve.
Part. act. *Confiſant,* preſerving.
Part. paſſ. *Confit,* preſerved.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Confis, confis, confit,* I preſerve,
Plur. *Confiſons, confiſez, confiſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Confiſois, confiſois, confiſoit,* I did preſerve.
Plur. *Confiſions, confiſiez, confiſoient.*

Preterite.

Preterite.

Sing. *Confis, confis, confit*, I preſerved.
Plur. *Confîmes, confîtes, confirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Confirai, confiras, confira*, I ſhall or will preſerve.
Plur. *Confirons, confirez, confiront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Confirois, confirois, confiroit*, I ſhould, &c. preſerve.
Plur. *Confirions, confiriez, confiroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Confis, confiſe*, preſerve thou.
Plur. *Confiſons, confiſez, confiſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Confiſe, confiſes, confiſe*, that I may preſerve.
Plur. *Confiſions, confiſiez, confiſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Confiſſe, confiſſes, confît*, that I might preſerve.
Plur. *Confiſſions, confiſſiez, confiſſent.*

CONNOITRE, TO KNOW, TO BE ACQUAINTED WITH, *ſomebody*.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Connoître*, to know.
Part. act. *Connoiſſant*, knowing.
Part. paſſ. *Connu*, known.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Connois, connois, connoit*, I know.
Plur. *Connoiſſons, connoiſſez, connoiſſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Connoiſſois, connoiſſois, connoiſſoit,* I did know.
Plur. *Connoiſſions, connoiſſiez, connoiſſoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Connus, connus, connut,* I knew.
Plur. *Connûmes, connûtes, connurent.*

Future.

Sing. *Connoitrai, connoitras, connoitra,* I ſhall, &c.
Plur. *Connoitrons, connoitrez, connoitront.* know.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Connoitrois, connoitrois, cannoitroit,* I ſhould, &c. know.
Plur. *Connoitrions, connoitriez, connoitroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Connois, connoiſſe,* know thou.
Plur. *Connoiſſons, connoiſſez, connoiſſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Connoiſſe, connoiſſes, connoiſſe,* that I may know.
Plur. *Connoiſſions, connoiſſiez, connoiſſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Connuſſe, connuſſes, connût,* that I might know.
Plur. *Connuſſions, connuſſiez, connuſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,

Méconnoître, to take for another.
Reconnoître, to acknowledge, to know again.

CONSTRUIRE, TO CONSTRUCT, TO BUILD, is conjugated as *CONDUIRE.*

CONTRAINDRE, TO CONSTRAIN, TO COMPEL, TO FORCE, is conjugated as *CRAINDRE.*

COU-

COUDRE, TO SEW, TO STITCH.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Coudre*, to ſew.
Part. act. *Couſant*, ſewing.
Part. paſſ. *Couſu*, ſewed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Couds*, *couds*, *coud*, I ſew, or am ſewing.
Plur. *Couſons*, *couſez*, *couſent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Couſois*, *couſois*, *couſoit*, I did ſew, or was ſewing.
Plur. *Couſions*, *couſiez*, *couſoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Couſis*, *couſis*, *couſit*, I ſewed.
Plur. *Cousîmes*, *cousîtes*, *couſirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Coudrai*, *coudras*, *coudra*, I ſhall or will ſew.
Plur. *Coudrons*, *coudrez*, *coudront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Coudrois*, *coudrois*, *coudroit*, I ſhould, &c. ſew.
Plur. *Coudrions*, *coudriez*, *coudroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Couds*, *couſe*, ſew thou.
Plur. *Couſons*, *couſez*, *couſent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Couſe*, *couſes*, *couſe*, that I may ſew.
Plur. *Couſions*, *couſiez*, *couſent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Couſiſſe*, *couſiſſes*, *cousît*, that I might ſew.
Plur. *Couſiſſions*, *couſiſſiez*, *couſiſſent*.

Its compounds are,
Découdre, to unſew. *Recoudre*, to ſew again.

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING VERBS AND THEIR COMPOUNDS.

Do you know Mr. A. ? — Yes, we know him
Oui, adv.
very well ; and, though he be rich, I aſſure you he is not the more charitable for it. — He has been beaten (ſoundly.) —— If you knew the queſtion, you would
comme il faut. *queſtion*, f.
reſolve it in two words. — I will ſoon conclude, if you
mot, m.
think as your brother does. — We ſhould beat
comme, adv.
them if they did not fight in their own country. —
propre, adj.
Do not beat him any more, he acknowledges his fault. —
faute, f.
You would never ſee him again if you knew him. — Mr. R. told me ſome time ago that he would build a ſhip on a new plan. — What will you drink ? — I will drink nothing but water. — Do not drink ſo much. —
ne . que *tant*, adv.
If your father were here you would not drink (at all.)
du tout.
— Let us fill our glaſſes and drink our friends health.
verre, m. *ſanté*, f.
— Come with us, we ſhall ſee whether ſhe will know
ſi, c.
you again or not. — If you knew her, I am certain ſhe would pleaſe you. — After tea we conducted the la-
plaire, v. *thé*, m.
dies

dies to the concert. — When they had explained to us all that had paſſed, we acknowledged we (were in the wrong.) — Unſew that gown. — I will ſew it to-morrow. — Why do not you preſerve ſome fruits this year? — He could not know you if he ſaw you now. — Did you aſk him whether he were acquainted with any of theſe ladies? — You will force your father to puniſh you if you do not behave better. — The laſt time we went to Vauxhall we drank three bottles of Champaign wine. — Thence we concluded you could not come to-day. — I know nobody in this neighbourhood. — I knew your ſiſter again as ſoon as I ſaw her. — Though you ſhould take three dozen of them I could not abate a farthing. — The wind was ſo great that it has thrown down one or two trees in our garden.

ſe paſſer, v. *avoir tort.*

année, f.

à-préſent, adv.

ſi, c.

à

ſe comporter, v.

De là, adv.

voiſinage, m.

Quand, c. *douzaine*, f.

liard, m. *vent*, m.

CRAINDRE, TO FEAR, TO BE AFRAID.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Craindre*, to fear.
Part. act. *Craignant*, fearing.
Part. paſſ. *Craint*, feared.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Crains*, *crains*, *craint*, I fear, or am afraid.
Plur. *Craignons*, *craignez*, *craignent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Craignois*, *craignois*, *craignoit*, I did fear, or was
Plur. *Craignions*, *craigniez*, *craignoient*. afraid.

Preterite.

Sing. *Craignis*, *craignis*, *craignit*, I feared.
Plur. *Craignîmes*, *craignîtes*, *craignirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Craindrai*, *craindras*, *craindra*, I ſhall or will
Plur. *Craindrons*, *craindrez*, *craindront*. fear.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Craindrois*, *craindrois*, *craindroit*, I ſhould, &c.
Plur. *Craindrions*, *craindriez*, *craindroient*. fear.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Crains*, *craigne*, fear thou.
Plur. *Craignons*, *craignez*, *craignent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Craigne*, *craignes*, *craigne*, that I may fear.
Plur. *Craignions*, *craigniez*, *craignent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Craigniſſe*, *craigniſſes*, *craignît*, that I might
Plur. *Craigniſſions*, *craigniſſiez*, *craigniſſent*. fear.

CROIRE,

CROIRE, TO BELIEVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Croire*, to believe.
Part. act. *Croyant*, believing.
Part. paſſ. *Cru*, believed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Crois*, *crois*, *croit*, I believe.
Plur. *Croyons*, *croyez*, *croient*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Croyois*, *croyois*, *croyoit*, I did believe.
Plur. *Croyions*, *croyiez*, *croyoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Crus*, *crus*, *crut*, I believed.
Plur. *Crûmes*, *crûtes*, *crurent*.

Future.

Sing. *Croirai*, *croiras*, *croira*, I ſhall or will believe.
Plur. *Croirons*, *croirez*, *croiront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Croirois*, *croirois*, *croiroit*, I ſhould, &c. believe.
Plur. *Croirions*, *croiriez*, *croiroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Crois*, *croie*, believe thou.
Plur. *Croyons*, *croyez*, *croient*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Croie*, *croies*, *croie*, that I may believe.
Plur. *Croyons*, *croyez*, *croient*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Cruſſe*, *cruſſes*, *crût*, that I might believe.
Plur. *Cruſſions*, *cruſſiez*, *cruſſent*.

CROITRE,

CROITRE, TO GROW,

And its compounds,

Accroître, to accrue, *Recroître*, to grow again,
Décroître, to decreaſe, to grow leſs,

are conjugated like *CONNOITRE*.

CUIRE, TO BAKE TO BOIL, *often Engliſhed by* TO DO,

and its compound *Recuire*, to boil again,

DEDUIRE, TO DEDUCT, TO ABATE, and *DETRUIRE*, TO DESTROY,

are conjugated like *CONDUIRE*.

DIRE, TO SAY, TO TELL.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Dire*, to ſay.
Part. act. *Diſant*, ſaying.
Part. paſſ. *Dit*, ſaid.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Dis*, *dis*, *dit*, I ſay, or am ſaying.
Plur. *Diſons*, *dites*,* *diſent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Diſois*, *diſois*, *diſoit*, I did ſay, or was ſaying.
Plur. *Diſions*, *diſiez*, *diſoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Dis*, *dis*, *dit*, I did ſay, or ſaid.
Plur. *Dîmes*, *dites*, *dirent*.

Future.

Future.

Sing. *Dirai, diras, dira,* I ſhall or will ſay.
Plur. *Dirons, direz, diront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Dirois, dirois, diroit,* I ſhould, &c. ſay.
Plur. *Dirions, diriez, diroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Dis, diſe,* ſay thou.
Plur. *Diſons, dites,* diſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Diſe, diſes, diſe,* that I may ſay.
Plur. *Diſions, diſiez, diſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Diſſe, diſſes, dit,* that I might ſay.
Plur. *Diſſions, diſſiez, diſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,

Contredire, to contradict.
Se dédire, to unſay, to retract, to recant.
Médire, to ſlander, to ſpeak ill.
Maudire, to curſe.
Interdire, to interdict, to forbid.
Prédire, to foretel.
Redire, to ſay, or tell, again.

* All the above compounds (*Redire* excepted, which is conjugated like its primitive) make *iſez* inſtead of *ites*; and *Maudire* doubles its *ſ* through the whole verb: ex. *Nous maudiſſons, vous maudiſſez, ils maudiſſent, &c.*

ECRIRE, TO WRITE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Ecrire,* to write.
Part. act. *Ecrivant,* writing.
Part paſſ. *Ecrit,* written.

INDICA-

Indicative Mood.

Preſent.

Sing. *Ecris, écris, écrit,* I write, or am writing.
Plur. *Ecrivons, écrivez, écrivent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Ecrivois, écrivois, écrivoit,* I did write, or was
Plur. *Ecrivions, écriviez, écrivoient.* writing.

Preterite.

Sing. *Ecrivis, écrivis, écrivit,* I wrote, or did write.
Plur. *Ecrivîmes, écrivîtes, écrivirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Ecrirai, écriras, écrira,* I ſhall or will write.
Plur. *Ecrirons, écrirez, écriront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Ecrirois, écrirois, écriroit,* I ſhould, &c. write.
Plur. *Ecririons, écririez, écriroient.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing. *Ecris, écrive,* write thou.
Plur. *Ecrivons, écrivez, écrivent.*

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Ecrive, écrives, écrive,* that I may write.
Plur. *Ecrivions, écriviez, écrivent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Ecriviſſe, écriviſſes, écrivît,* that I might
Plur. *Ecriviſſions, écriviſſiez, écriviſſent.* write.

The compounds of this verb are,

Décrire, to deſcribe.
Inſcrire, to inſcribe.
Preſcrire, to preſcribe.
Proſcrire, to proſcribe, to outlaw.
Souſcrire, to ſubſcribe.
Tranſcrire, to tranſcribe.

E N-

ENDUIRE, TO DO OVER,
is conjugated like *CONDUIRE*.

ETEINDRE, TO PUT OUT,
is conjugated like *CRAINDRE*.

EXCLURE, TO EXCLUDE,
is conjugated like *CONCLURE*.
Its participle paſſive is *exclus*.

FAIRE, TO MAKE, TO DO.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Faire*, to make.
Part. act. *Faiſant*, making.
Part. paſſ. *Fait*, made.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Fais*, *fais*, *fait*, I make, or am making.
Plur. *Faiſons*, *faites*, *font*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Faiſois*, *faiſois*, *faiſoit*, I did make, or was making.
Plur. *Faiſions*, *faiſiez*, *faiſoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Fis*, *fis*, *fit*, I made, or did make.
Plur. *Fimes*, *fîtes*, *firent*.

Future.

Sing. *Ferai*, *feras*, *fera*, I ſhall or will make.
Plur. *Ferons*, *ferez*, *feront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Ferois, ferois, ferait*, I ſhould, &c. make.
Plur. *Ferions, feriez, feroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Fais, faſſe*, thou make.
Plur. *Faiſons, faites, faſſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Faſſe,*	*faſſes,*	*faſſe,*	that I may make.
Plur.	*Faſſions,*	*faſſiez,*	*faſſent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Fiſſe,*	*fiſſes,*	*fît,*	that I might make.
Plur.	*Fiſſions,*	*fiſſiez,*	*fiſſent.*	

The compounds of this verb are,

Contrefaire, to counterfeit, to mimic.
Défaire, to undo.
Se défaire, to get rid of, to part with.
Refaire, to do, or make up, again.
Redéfaire, to undo again.
Satisfaire, to ſatisfy.
Surfaire, to exact, to aſk too much.

FEINDRE, TO FEIGN, TO DISSEMBLE, TO PRETEND,

is conjugated like *CRAINDRE.*

FRIRE, TO FRY.

This verb is more elegantly uſed in its preſent infinitive with the verb *faire* conjugated: ex.

Faites frire *ce poiſſon*, *Fry* that fiſh.

Its participle paſſive is *frit*, fried.

IN-

INDUIRE, TO INDUCE,
INSTRUIRE, TO INSTRUCT,
and *INTRODUIRE*, TO INTRODUCE,
are conjugated like *CONDUIRE*.

JOINDRE, TO JOIN,
And its compound, *Enjoindre*, to enjoin,
are conjugated like *CRAINDRE*.

LIRE, TO READ.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Lire*, to read.
Part. act. *Liſant*, reading.
Part. paſſ. *Lu*, read.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Lis*, *lis*, *lit*, I read, or am reading.
Plur. *Liſons*, *liſez*, *liſent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Liſois*, *liſois*, *liſoit*, I did read, or was reading.
Plur. *Liſions*, *liſiez*, *liſoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Lus*, *lus*, *lut*, I did read, or read.
Plur. *Lûmes*, *lûtes*, *lurent*.

Future.

Sing. *Lirai*, *liras*, *lira*, I ſhall or will read.
Plur. *Lirons*, *lirez*, *liront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Lirois*, *lirois*, *liroit*, I ſhould, would, &c. read.
Plur. *Lirions*, *liriez*, *liroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Lis, liſe,* read thou.
Plur. *Liſons, liſez, liſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Liſe, liſes, liſe,* that I may read.
Plur. *Liſions, liſiez, liſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Luſſe, luſſes, lût,* that I might read.
Plur. *Luſſions, luſſiez, luſſent.*

Its compounds are,

Elire, to elect. *Relire,* to read again.

LUIRE, TO SHINE,

And its compound, *Reluire,* to glitter,

Are conjugated as *CONDUIRE*; but take no *t* at the end of their participle paſſive: ex. *Lui,* ſhined.

METTRE, TO PUT.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Mettre,* to put.
Part act. *Mettant,* putting.
Part paſſ. *Mis,* put.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Mets, mets, met,* I put, or am putting.
Plur. *Mettons, mettez, mettent.*

Imperfect.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Mettois*, *mettois*, *mettoit*, I did put, or was
Plur. *Mettions*, *mettiez*, *mettoient*. putting.

Preterite.

Sing. *Mis*, *mis*, *mit*, I did put, or put.
Plur. *Mimes*, *mites*, *mirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Mettrai*, *mettras*, *mettra*, I ſhall or will put.
Plur. *Mettrons*, *mettrez*, *mettront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Mettrois*, *mettrois*, *mettroit*, I ſhould, would,
Plur. *Mettrions*, *mettriez*, *mettroient*. &c. put.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Mets*, *mette*, put thou.
Plur. *Mettons*, *mettez*, *mettent*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

que *que*
Sing. *Mette*, *mettes*, *mette*, that I may put.
Plur. *Mettions*, *mettiez*, *mettent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Miſſe*, *miſſes*, *mit*, that I might put.
Plur. *Miſſions*, *miſſiez*, *miſſent*.

The compounds of this verb are,

Admettre, to admit.
Commettre, to commit.
Compromettre, to compromiſe.
Demettre, to turn out, to remove.
Se demettre de, to reſign.
Omettre, to omit.
Permettre, to permit.
Promettre, to promiſe.*
Remettre, to deliver up, to put back again, to recollect, to put off.
Soumettre, to ſubmit.
Tranſmettre, to tranſmit.

* The participle of this verb (promiſing) when uſed adjectively, and expreſſing the mental qualities of ſomebody, is rendered in French by *qui promet*, or *promettoit*,

toit, *beaucoup*, or *dont il y a*, or *avoit*, *beaucoup à eſperer*, ex:

Major A. étoit un officier qui promettoit beaucoup, *or* dont il y avoit beaucoup à eſpérer,	Major A. was a very *promiſing* officer.

MOUDRE, to GRIND.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Moudre*, to grind.
Part act. *Moulant*, grinding.
Part. paſſ. *Moulu*, ground.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Mous*, *mous*, *mout*, I grind, or am grinding.
Plur. *Moulons*, *moulez*, *moulent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Moulois*, *moulois*, *mouloit*, I did grind, or was
Plur. *Moulions*, *mouliez*, *mouloient*. grinding.

Preterite.

Sing. *Moulus*, *moulus*, *moulut*, I ground, or did
Plur. *Moulûmes*, *moulûtes*, *moulurent*. grind.

Future.

Sing. *Moudrai*, *moudras*, *moudra*, I ſhall or will
Plur. *Moudrons*, *moudrez*, *moudront*. grind.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Moudrois*, *moudrois*, *moudroit*, I ſhould, would,
Plur. *Moudrions*, *moudriez*, *moudroient*. &c. grind.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Mous*, *moule*, grind thou.
Plur. *Moulons*, *moulez*, *moulent*.

SUB-

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Moule,*	*moules,*	*moule,*	that I may grind.
Plur.	*Moulions,*	*mouliez,*	*moulent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Mouluſſe,*	*mouluſſes,*	*moulût,*	that I might grind.
Plur.	*Mouluſſions,*	*mouluſſiez,*	*mouluſſent.*	

The compounds of this verb are,

Emoudre, to whet. *Remoudre,* to grind again.

EXERCISES UPON THE FOREGOING VERBS AND THEIR COMPOUNDS.

Do not fear to tell her what you think of it. — I
de *penſer*, v.
will ſpeak to her to oblige you, but I know ſhe does
pour, p.
not fear me. — Why do you not believe me. — They
(are afraid) of being expoſed to ſome dangers. — We
être, v.
would not believe him though he ſhould tell truth. —
quand, c. *vérité*, f.
Theſe flowers would grow much better if you watered
fleur, f. *aroſer*, v.
them oftener. — Put out the candle, and do not pretend
to ſleep. — Were I in town, I would tell them all that
de *en*, p.
I know (about it.) — Say nothing to her, believe me.
en, pro. *ne rien*
— I will tell it to you to-morrow. — I eſteem your
eſtimer, v.
daughter

daughter much, because she told me sincerely that she would do neither. — They, who say all they know, will readily say what they do not know. — Tell the *volontiers*, adv.
truth with modesty: they, who do not love it, will always respect and fear it. — If I see your father shall I tell him you are afraid of not succeeding? — Do you think me capable of forgetting my friends so soon? — You always *oublier*, v.
contradict me when I speak. — I hope you will not tell them what happened to me yesterday. — I do not like Miss D. because she speaks ill of every body. — Does *parceque*, c.
Mr. R. write to you (now and then) from Paris? — *de tems en tems*, adv.
Do you know his direction? — Would you not write to *adresse*, f.
him if you knew it? — We were writing while *pendant que*, c.
they slept. — The last time they wrote to him they de- *pri-*
sired him to send them the invoice of the goods, and *er*, v. *de* *facture*, f.
he has still omitted it in this letter. — What are *encore*, adv.
you doing now? — I am making a cap for your *maintenant*, adv.
sister. — Do not do that, I will do it myself. — I would

do

do it with all my heart if I could. — Why do not you
de
fry that fiſh? —— The firſt time you (come) to
fois,f. (by the fut.)
ſee me, I will ſhew you ſome flowers in my garden
which will ſurpriſe you. — Theſe roſe-trees grow
ſurprendre,v. *roſier*,m.
perceptibly. — Though they ſhould deduct ten per cent.
à vue d'œil,adv. *Quand*,c.
they would get ſtill enough. — I never buy
gaguer,v. *encore*,adv. *acheter*,v.
any thing at Mr. P——'s, for he always aſks too
chez,p. *car*,c.
much for his goods. — I will undo my gown to-
marchandiſe,f.
morrow, and do it up again immediately. — The firſt
ſur le champ,adv.
time you mimic any one I will puniſh you ſeverely.
(by the fut.)
— I would introduce your ſiſter to Mrs. F. if I knew
her. — They were playing while you inſtructed them.
— You truly join what is uſeful to what is a-
vraiment,adv.
greeable. — Did not our ſoldiers join dexterity to va-
adreſſe,f.
lour. — If you do not take great care of your flow-
prendre,v.
ers the froſt will deſtroy them. — Mr. S. ſays he will
gelée,f.
get rid of his horſe at the beginning of next month.
commencement,m.

— You

— You would put out the fire if, &c. —Undo that, and make it up again before dinner.——Your daughter
avant,p.
joins to the love of ſtudy the deſire of ſurpaſſing her companions. — She reads the Hiſtory of England every
compagne,f.
day from three o'clock to five. — I will read
heure,f. *juſqu'à*,p.
your letter as ſoon as I am dreſſed. — The in-
(by the fut.)*habillé*,p.p.
habitants of W—— have elected Mr. X. for their re-
re-
preſentative in parliament. — I was reading Marmon-
préſentant,m.
tel's Tales when you came in. — Mr. R. wrote to
conte,m. *entrer*,v.
me ſome time ago, that, when he was in London, the
à
Earl of E—— told him we ſhould ſoon ſee a great
Comte,m.
change in the miniſtry. —— He often writes to
changement,m. *miniſtere*,m.
me, and always concludes his letters thus: (be ſo kind
avoir la bonté
as to) ſend me ſome news whatever they be.——Put
de
theſe books in their places again. — I believe he did it through ſpite. — Shall I put another trimming to your
par,p. *dépit*,m. *garniture*,f.
gown? — I read laſt year a very good book, but I cannot remember the author's name. — What grammar

do

do you read? — Whatever merit a master has, he cannot succeed in teaching young people if he do not
à, p.
join practice to theory. — I would put all your china
porcelaine, f.
in that closet if I had the key of it. — You could
cabinet, m.
not do it in ten days if I did not help you. — We
aider, v.
would not permit him to go out, though they would. —
de *quand*, c.
He promised to pay me the tenth of this month, but he has now put me off to the third of December. — He submitted to it with the greatest patience. — You promise enough, but you seldom keep your word. —
rarement, adv. *tenir*, v.
Mr. D. is a very promising young man. — Will they not admit Mr. Z. in their society? — The English fleets have performed acti ns worthy to be transmitted
faire, v.
to posterity. — Your brother promises me every day to
de
amend, but, &c. — Were I their master I would
se corriger, v.
not permit them to go out to-day. — I was wri-
de
ting to you when your servant brought me your letter.

NAITRE, TO BE BORN, TO RISE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Naître*, to be born.
Part. act. *Naiſſant*, being born, riſing.
Part. paſſ. *Né*, been born.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Nais nais, nait*, I am born.
Plur. *Naiſſons, naiſſez, naiſſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Naſſois, naiſſois, naiſſoit*, I was born.
Plur. *Naiſſions, naiſſiez, naiſſoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Naquis, naquis, naquit*, I was born.
Plur. *Naquîmes, naquîtes, naquirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Naitrai, naitras, naitra*, I ſhall or will be born.
Plur. *Naitrons, naitrez, naitront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Naitrois, naitrois, naitroit*, I ſhould, &c. be born.
Plur. *Naitrions, naitriez, naitroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Nais, naiſſe*, be thou born.
Plur. *Naiſſons, naiſſez, naiſſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Naiſſe, naiſſes, naiſſe*, that I may be born.
Plur. *Naiſſions, naiſſiez, naiſſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Naquiſſe, naquiſſes, naquît*, that I might be born.
Plur. *Naquiſſions, naquiſſiez, naquiſſent.*

The compound of this verb is

Renaître, to be born again, to revive.

NUIRE.

NUIRE, TO HURT,

is conjugated like *CONDUIRE*, but makes in its participle paſſive *nui*.

OINDRE, TO ANOINT.

This verb is ſeldom uſed except in ſpeaking of ſacred ceremonies wherein oil is made uſe of. It is conjugated like *CRAINDRE*.

PAITRE, TO FEED, TO GRASE,

PAROITRE, TO APPEAR, TO SEEM,

and its compounds,

Comparoître, to appear, to *Diſparoître*, to diſappear, make one's evidence,

are conjugated like *CONNOITRE*.

PEINDRE, TO PAINT, TO DRAW,

PLAINDRE, TO PITY,

and *Se plaindre*, to complain,

are conjugated like *CRAINDRE*.

PLAIRE, TO PLEASE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent.	*Plaire*, to pleaſe.
Part. act.	*Plaiſant*, pleaſing.
Part. paſſ.	*Plu*, pleaſed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Plais, plais, plait,* I pleaſe.
Plur. *Plaiſons, plaiſez, plaiſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Plaiſois, plaiſois, plaiſoit,* I did pleaſe, or was
Plur. *Plaiſions, plaiſiez, plaiſoient.* pleaſing.

Preterite.

Sing. *Plus, plus, plut,* I pleaſed, or did pleaſe.
Plur. *Plûmes, plûtes, plurent.*

Future.

Sing. *Plairai, plairas, plaira,* I ſhall or will pleaſe.
Plur. *Plairons, plairez, plairont.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Plairois, plairois, plairoit,* I ſhould, would, &c.
Plur. *Plairions, plairiez, plairoient.* pleaſe.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Plais, plaiſe,* pleaſe thou.
Plur. *Plaiſons, plaiſez, plaiſent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Plaiſe, plaiſes, plaiſe,* that I may pleaſe.
Plur. *Plaiſions, plaiſiez, plaiſent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Pluſſe, pluſſes, plût,* that I might pleaſe.
Plur. *Pluſſions, pluſſiez, pluſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,
Complaire, to humour. *Déplaire,* to diſpleaſe.

PRENDRE, TO TAKE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Prendre,* to take.
Part. act. *Prenant,* taking.
Part. paſſ. *Pris,* taken.

INDI-

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Prends, prends, prend,* I take, or am taking.
Plur. *Prenons, prenez, prennent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Prenois, prenois, prenoit,* I did take, or was taking.
Plur. *Preniions, preniez, prenoient.*

Preterite.

Sing. *Pris, pris, prit,* I took, or did take.
Plur. *Prîmes, prîtes, prirent.*

Future.

Sing. *Prendrai, prendras, prendra,* I ſhall or will take.
Plur. *Prendrons, prendrez, prendront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Prendrois, prendrois, prendroit,* I ſhould, would,
Plur. *Prendrions, prendriez, prendroient.* &c. take.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Prends, prenne,* take thou.
Plur. *Prenons, prenez, prennent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Prenne, prennes, prenne,* that I may take.
Plur. *Prenions, preniez, prennent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Priſſe, priſſes, prît,* that I might take.
Plur. *Priſſions, priſſiez, priſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,

Apprendre, to learn.
——— *des nouvelles,* to hear of.
Comprendre, to apprehend, to underſtand.
Entreprendre, to undertake.
Méprendre, to miſtake, to be deceived.
Reprendre, to take again, to chide, to rebuke.
Surprendre, to ſurpriſe.

PRODUIRE, TO PRODUCE,
REDUIRE, TO REDUCE, TO BRING TO,
are conjugated like *CONDUIRE*.

RESTREINDRE, TO RESTRAIN,
is conjugated like *CRAINDRE*.

RIRE, TO LAUGH.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Rire*, to laugh.
Part. act. *Riant*, laughing.
Part. paſſ. *Ri*, laughed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Ris*, *ris*, *rit*, I laugh, or am laughing.
Plur. *Rions*, *riez*, *rient*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Riois*, *riois*, *rioit*, I laughed, or was laughing.
Plur. *Riions*, *riiez*, *rioient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Ris*, *ris*, *rit*, I laughed, or did laugh.
Plur. *Rîmes*, *rîtes*, *rirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Rirai*, *riras*, *rira*, I ſhall or will laugh.
Plur. *Rirons*, *rirez*, *riront*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Rirois*, *rirois*, *rirait*, I ſhould, could, &c. laugh.
Plur. *Ririons*, *ririez*, *riroient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Ris*, *rie*, laugh thou.
Plur. *Rions*, *riez*, *rient*.

SUB-

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	*que*	*que*	
Sing.	*Rie,*	*ries,*	*rie,*	that I may laugh.
Plur.	*Riions,*	*riiez,*	*rient.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Riſſe,*	*riſſes,*	*rît,*	that I might laugh.
Plur.	*Riſſions,*	*riſſiez,*	*riſſent.*	

The compound of this verb is,
Sourire, to ſmile.

SEDUIRE, TO SEDUCE,
is conjugated as *CONDUIRE.*

SUFFIRE, TO SUFFICE, TO BE SUFFICIENT,
is conjugated like *CONFIRE,* but its participle paſſive is *ſuffi.*

SUIVRE, TO FOLLOW.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent.	*Suivre,*	to follow.
Part. act.	*Suivant,*	following.
Part. paſſ.	*Suivi,*	followed.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing.	*Suis,*	*ſuis,*	*ſuit,*	I follow, or am following.
Plur.	*Suivons,*	*ſuivez,*	*ſuivent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing. *Suivois, ſuivois, ſuivoit,* I did follow, or was
Plur. *Suivions, ſuiviez, ſuivoient.* following.

Preterite.

Sing. *Suivis, ſuivis, ſuivit,* I followed, or did fol-
Plur. *Suivîmes, ſuivîtes, ſuivirent.* low.

Future.

Sing. *Suivrai, ſuivras, ſuivra,* I ſhall or will follow.
Plur. *Suivrons, ſuivrez, ſuivront.*

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Suivrois, ſuivrois, ſuivroit,* I ſhould, &c. follow.
Plur. *Suivrions, ſuivriez, ſuivroient.*

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Suis, ſuive,* follow thou.
Plur. *Suivons, ſuivez, ſuivent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Suive, ſuives, ſuive,* that I may follow.
Plur. *Suivions, ſuiviez, ſuivent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Suiviſſe, ſuiviſſes, ſuivît,* that I might follow.
Plur. *Suiviſſions, ſuiviſſiez, ſuiviſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,
S'enſuivre, to follow from. *Pourſuivre,* to purſue.

Se TAIRE, TO HOLD ONE'S TONGUE,
is conjugated as *PLAIRE.*

TEINDRE, TO DYE,
is conjugated like *CRAINDRE.*

TRA-

TRADUIRE, TO TRANSLATE,

is conjugated like *CONDUIRE*.

TRAIRE, TO MILK.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Traire*, to milk.
Part. act. *Trayant*, milking.
Part. paſſ. *Trait*, milked.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Trais*, *trais*, *trait*, I milk, or am milking.
Plur. *Trayons*, *trayez*, *traient*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Trayois*, *trayois*, *trayoit*, I did milk, or was
Plur. *Trayions*, *trayiez*, *trayoient*. milking.

Preterite wanting.

Future.

Sing. *Trairai*, *trairas*, *traira*, I ſhall or will milk.
Plur. *Trairons*, *trairez*, *trairont*.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Trairois*, *trairois*, *trairoit*, I ſhould, &c. milk.
Plur. *Trairions*, *trairiez*, *trairoient*.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Trais*, *traie*, milk thou.
Plur. *Trayons*, *trayez*, *traient*.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que *que* *que*
Sing. *Traie*, *traies*, *traie*, that I may milk.
Plur. *Trayions*, *trayiez*, *traient*.

Imperfect is wanting.

The

The compounds of this verb are,

Abſtraire, to abſtract. *Rentraire*, to finedraw.
Diſtraire, to diſtract. *Souſtraire*, to ſubtract.
Extraire, to extract.

VAINCRE, TO VANQUISH, TO CONQUER.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Vaincre*, to conquer.
Part. act *Vainquant*, conquering.
Part. paſſ. *Vaincu*, conquered.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing. *Vaincs*, *vaincs*, *vainc*,* I conquer.
Plur. *Vainquons*, *vainquez*, *vainquent*.

Imperfect.

Sing. *Vainquois*, *vainquois*, *vainquoit*, I did conquer.
Plur. *Vainquions*, *vainquiez*, *vainquoient*.

Preterite.

Sing. *Vainquis*, *vainquis*, *vainquit*, I conquered.
Plur. *Vainquîmes*, *vainquîtes*, *vainquirent*.

Future.

Sing. *Vaincrai*, *vaincras*, *vaincra*, I ſhall or will con-
Plur. *Vaincrons*, *vaincrez*, *vaincront*. quer.

Conditional preſent.

Sing. *Vaincrois*, *vaincrois*, *vaincroit*, I ſhould, &c.
Plur. *Vaincrions*, *vaincriez*, *vaincroient*. conquer.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Vaincs*, *vainque*, conquer thou.
Plur. *Vainquons*, *vainquez*, *vainquent*.

* This ſingular is very little uſed.

SUB-

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

	Que	que	que	
Sing.	*Vainque,*	*vainques,*	*vainque,*	that I may con-
Plur.	*Vainquions,*	*vainquiez,*	*vainquent.*	quer.

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Vainquiſſe,*	*vainquiſſes,*	*vainquît,*	that I might conquer.
Plur.	*Vainquiſſions,*	*vainquiſſiez,*	*vainquiſſent.*	

The compound of this verb is,

Convaincre, to convince.

VIVRE, TO LIVE.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Vivre,* to live.
Part. act. *Vivant,* living.
Part. paſſ. *Vécu,* lived.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Sing.	*Vis,*	*vis,*	*vit,*	I live, or was living.
Plur.	*Vivons,*	*vivez,*	*vivent.*	

Imperfect.

Sing.	*Vivois,*	*vivois,*	*vivoit,*	I did live, or was living.
Plur.	*Vivions,*	*viviez,*	*vivoient.*	

Preterite.

Sing.	*Vécus,*	*vécus,*	*vécut,*	I lived, or did live.
Plur.	*Vecûmes,*	*vécûtes,*	*vécurent.*	

Future.

Sing.	*Vivrai,*	*vivras,*	*vivra,*	I ſhall or will live.
Plur.	*Vivrons,*	*vivrez,*	*vivront.*	

Conditional preſent.

Sing.	*Vivrois,*	*vivrois,*	*vivroit,*	I ſhould, would, &c.
Plur.	*Vivrions,*	*vivriez,*	*vivroient.*	live.

IMPE-

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Sing. *Vis, vive,* live thou.
Plur. *Vivons, vivez, vivent.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent.

Que que que
Sing. *Vive, vives, vive,* that I may live.
Plur. *Vivions, viviez, vivent.*

Imperfect.

Sing. *Vécuſſe, vécuſſes, vécût,* that I might live.
Plur. *Vécuſſions, vécuſſiez, vécuſſent.*

The compounds of this verb are,
Revivre, to revive. *Survivre,* to outlive.

EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING VERBS AND THEIR COMPOUNDS.

My brother was born in Paris on the eighth of Fe-
à *ſ.* *Fé-*
bruary, one thouſand ſeven hundred eighty-one.—The
*vrier,*m.
ſame men, who ſeem not to fear death when they
*lorſque,*adv.
are in good health, often dread it when they are
redouter, v.
ſick. — What does your ſiſter complain of? — The
ſwallows generally diſappear towards the end of au-
hirondelle, f. *vers,* p. *au-*
tumn. — You do not ſeem to pay any attention to
*tomne,*f. *faire,* v.
what I ſay to you. — This man paints very well I aſ-
aſ-
ſure

ſure you. —— Why would you hurt him, he never
ſurer, v.

did you any harm? — I ſhould pity and ſuccour him
faire, v. *mal*, m.

if it were not his fault. — You ſhall diſappear as
ce, pro.

ſoon as you have executed my orders. — The laſt
(by the fut.)

time I ſaw your ſiſter ſhe appeared to me thoughtful and
penſif, adj.

melancholy. —— She is a lady that pleaſes every body.
mélancholique, adj.

— She appears quite young: how old is ſhe? — Does
ſhe not learn drawing? — I ſee you do not complain
deſſein, m.

of him without a cauſe. — I really am ſurpriſed (at it.)
en, pro.

— As ſurpriſing as this ſeems to you, yet it is
cependant, adv.

true. — Does not Mrs. H. appear much concerned at
affligé, p. p. *de*

her daughter's death? — When you ſee Mrs. B.
(by the fut.)

I am certain ſhe will pleaſe you. — Did you never ſee
her? — She joins to the qualities of the body thoſe of
the mind. — Take ſome pears and carry them to your
brother. — Every time I ſee him I take him for a fo-
é-

reigner. — My ſiſter and I learn French, and under-
tranger, m.

ſtand very well all that (is ſaid) to us in that language.
on dit

— Though

— Though you ſhould learn all the rules, they would
Quand,c.
not (be ſufficient) without practice. — I did not un-
ſuffire, v.
derſtand what you ſaid. — Do not undertake to unde-
de détrom-
ceive her; believe me, you will loſe your time. —
per,v.
Though you ſhould undertake to prove the contrary,
de
ſhe would not believe you. — Why did you not take
the ſame road as we. — He (is not pleaſed) in his ſitu-
que *ſe plaire*, v.
ation, he now ſees all the dangers of it. — When did
you hear of him? — Captain D. told my father that he
had ſeen him and ſpoken to him at Madras. — We of-
ten miſtake when we judge of others by appear-
ſe méprendre,v. *juger*,v.
ances. — Leave me that book a little longer, do not
Laiſſer,v.
take it again. — That apple-tree produces no fruit. —
pommier,m.
We were reduced to the laſt extremity when they re-
took our ſhip. — Go and ſpeak to Mr.——; but,
ſ
above all, do not laugh. — Would you not laugh if you
ſur,p.
were in my place? — We laughed much yeſterday at
à
the play. — She was an agreeable lady, ſhe was ever
toujours,adv.
ſmiling

ſmiling when any body had the honour of ſpeaking to her. —He ſeduced her by his fine promiſes. — Whatever he may undertake, he never will ſucceed, he is too much addicted *adonné*,p.p. to the pleaſures of this world. — If we go together to *chez*,p. my brother's, will you be able to follow us? — I will follow you ſtep by ſtep. — *pas à pas*,adv. Why do you follow me as *comme* you do? You may ſet out when you pleaſe, we will follow you. — Hold your tongue, you do not know what you ſay. —What books do you tranſlate? — My maſter ſays I ſhall ſoon tranſlate Marmontel's works. —We ſhould have conquered them if we had fought. — They were quite tranſported with joy when they heard of the happy news of *de*,p. the peace. —— As long as *Tant que*, adv. her father and mother live, (by the fut.) they never will conſent to her marriage with Mr. R.—You will not live long if you drink ſo much. — She lived about *environ*,p. four years after *après*,p. her huſband's death. — George III. the eldeſt *aîné*,adj. ſon of Frede-

ric, prince of Wales, was born on the fourth of June,
Galles,f.

1738, and was proclaimed king of Great Britain on the
proclamer,v.

twenty-ſixth of October, 1760.—Let a man live in any

country whatever, he is ſure to be well reſpected and
de

treated every where if his behaviour and manners be
mœurs,f.pl.

ruled by the principles of a ſound policy and the laws
régler,v. *politique*,f.

of the country he lives in.

OF IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Verbs which relate to no perſon or thing, and which, as has been before obſerved, are only conjugated in the third perſon ſingular, are called impersonal verbs: they generally are preceded by one of the following pronouns, *il* or *on*; of this number are:

Il tonne, It thunders.
Il pleut, It rains.
On dit, People ſay, or it is ſaid, &c.

To which may be added ſeveral other verbs, which become impersonal when employed in the ſame manner: ex.

Il vous convient d'être modeſte,	It becomes you to be modeſt.
Il fait beau, froid, &c.	It is fine, cold, &c.
Il ſemble,	It ſeems.
Il s'enſuit que,	It follows that.
Il vaut mieux,	It is better, &c.

Theſe verbs, like others, whether regular or irregular, have their different tenſes, and are conjugated in the

the ſame manner as the perſonal verbs from which they are derived. The learner having gone through the other conjugations, the verbs of this claſs may the more eaſily be diſpenſed with. It will only be neceſſary to ſelect one that is not derived, and ſhew the manner of conjugating it, only premiſing, that the compound tenſes are formed, like others, by joining the participle paſſive to one of the tenſes of the auxiliary verb *avoir*, to have.

CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Pleuvoir*, to rain.
Part. act. *Pleuvant*, raining.
Part. paſſ. *Plu*, rained.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Affirmatively.

Preſent. *Il pleut*, it rains, it does rain.

Negatively.

Preſent. *Il ne pleut pas*, it does not rain.

Interrogatively.

Pleut-il? does it rain?
Ne pleut-il pas? does it not rain?

Imperfect. *Il pleuvoit*, it rained, or it was raining.
Preterite. *Il plut*, it rained.
Future. *Il pleuvra*, it ſhall or will rain.
Cond. preſ. *Il pleuvroit*, it would, ſhould, &c. rain.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Preſent. *Qu'il pleuve*, that it may rain.
Imperfect. *Qu'il plût*, that it might rain.

The following being of the firſt conjugation I ſhall only give the third perſon, preſent tenſe, of the indicative mood; the learner may eaſily find out the reſt.

Il arrive, it happens; from *arriver*, to happen.
Il bruïne, it drizzles; from *bruïner*, to drizzle.

Il éclaire,	it lightens;	from *éclairer*, to lighten.
Il gele,	it freezes;	*géler*, to freeze.
Il grele,	it hails;	*gréler*, to hail.
Il importe,	it matters; / it concerns;	*importer.*
Il nege,	it ſnows;	*néger*, to ſnow.
Il tonne,	it thunders;	*tonner*, to thunder.

The verb *AVOIR*, to have, conjugated impersonally with Y, the adverb of place.

Infinitive Mood.

Y avoir, there be.

Indicative Mood.

Affirmatively.

Preſent. *Il y a*, there is,* there are.

Negatively.

Preſent. *Il n'y a pas*, there is not, there are not.

Interrogatively.

Y a-t-il? is there? are there?

Imperfect. *Il y avoit*, there was, there were.
Preterite. *Il y eut*, there was, there were.
Future. *Il y aura*, there ſhall or will be.
Cond. pref. *Il y auroit*, there ſhould, would, &c. be.

Imperative Mood.

Qu'il y ait, let there be.

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent. *Qu'il y ait*, that there may be.
Imperfect. *Qu'il y eût*, that there might be.

Compound Tenses.

Il y a eu, there has, or have, been.
Il y avoit eu, there had been.

* *There is*, immediately followed by the negation NO and a participle active, muſt be rendered by *on ne peut pas, on ne ſauroit*: ex.

On ne peut pas, *or* on ne ſauroit, *ſortir aujourd'hui à cauſe de la pluie,*	*There is* no going out to-day becauſe of the rain: that is, *one cannot*, &c.

Il

Il y eut eu, there had been.
Il y aura eu, there ſhall or will have been.
Il y auroit eu, there ſhould, &c. have been.
Qu'il y ait eu, that there may have been.
Qu'il y eût eu, that there might have been.

This verb *il y a*, &c. when uſed to denote a quantity of time, is ſometimes rendered in Engliſh by *it is*, *it was*, &c. When the Engliſh prepoſition *ſince* is rendered (in French) by *que*: ex.

Combien y a-t-il que *votre pere eſt arrivé?* — How long *is it ſince* your father arrived?

But in all caſes where the Engliſh phraſe can be rendered negatively, *que* muſt be accompanied by the negation *ne*: ex.

Il y a *longtems* que *je* ne *vous ai vu*, — *It is* a long while *ſince* I ſaw you, or I have not ſeen you this long time.

It often happens that the verb *there is*, or *it is*, &c. is underſtood, in this caſe one of the words *ago*, *theſe*, or *for theſe*, is expreſſed as its ſubſtitutes: ex.

Il y a *trois mois que j'étois en France*, or *j'étois en France* il y a *trois mois**, — I was in France three months *ago*.

Il y a *quatre ans que mon frere eſt mort*, or *mon frere eſt mort* il y a *quatre ans**, — My brother has been dead *theſe* four years.

Il y a *ſix mois* que *mon pere eſt malade*, — My father has been ſick *theſe* ſix months.

It alſo happens that neither the verbs, nor any of the words, *ago*, *theſe*, &c. are expreſſed in the ſentence: ex.

* From theſe two inſtances it may be obſerved, that, if the verb *il y a*, &c. begin the ſentence, the word *que* muſt immediately follow the noun of number, but, if it be tranſpoſed, *que* muſt be omitted. The firſt conſtruction is to be preferred. The learner ſhould, at the ſame time, obſerve, that in the above ſentences the verb, which in Engliſh, is in the preterite indefinite, is rendered in French by the *preſent* of the indicative, and when in the preterpluperfect by the *imperfect* of the ſame mood.

Il y a *à-préſent neuf ans que ma tante demeure dans ce voiſinage,*	My aunt has now lived nine years in this neighbourhood.
Il y avoit *deux ans que ma ſœur étoit en France quand j'y allai,*	My ſiſter had been two years in France when I went there.
N'y avoit-il *pas ſix mois qu'elle demeuroit avec nous quand elle mourut?*	Had ſhe not lived ſix months with us when ſhe died?
Il n'y a *pas plus d'une heure que nous pêchons ici,*	We have not been above an hour fiſhing here.
Il y aura *ſix ans à Noël que votre frere eſt chez M. O——,*	Your brother will have been at Mr. O—'s ſix years at Chriſtmas.
N'y aura-*t*-il *pas un an au mois d'Août prochain que votre ſœur eſt à Paris?*	Will not your ſiſter have been a year at Paris next Auguſt.

N. B. The learner cannot pay too great attention to the conſtruction of the above ſentences.

The verb *être*, to be, becomes impersonal, when followed by a *ſubſtantive*, or one of the pronouns *perſonal*, *poſſeſſive*, or *demonſtrative*, and is always conjugated with the pronoun demonſtrative *ce*, whether ſpeaking of perſons or things: ex.

C'eſt la loi *qui l'ordonne,*	*It* is *the law* that preſcribes it.
C'eſt moï *qui l'ai fait,*	*It* is *I* who have done it.
C'eſt une choſe triſte,	*It* is *a ſad thing.*
C'eſt une facheuſe extrémité,	*It* is *a dreadful extremity.*
C'eſt, or ce *ſont*, eux *qui l'ont fait,*	*It* is *they* who have done it.

From theſe two laſt inſtances, it appears, that *it is*, &c. followed by a noun or pronoun of the third perſon plural, may be rendered in French two ways. But when *it is*, &c. is uſed in aſking a queſtion, it is always put in the ſingular, though the noun or pronoun be in the plural number: ex.

Eſt-*ce* eux *qui l'ont fait?*	*Is* it *they* who have done it?

He, she, they, immediately followed by *who, whom*, or *that*, and *such as*, whether separated in English or not, but implying people in general, are often made into French by the impersonal *c'est*, with an infinitive followed by *que de* before a second infinitive: ex.

C'est être *fou* que de perdre *le tems à ces bagatelles*,	He is a fool who loses his time in those trifles.
C'est être *heureux* que d'être *content de son sort*,	Such as are satisfied with their lot are happy.

But, if the sentence be negative, *c'est ne pas* must be used, and the above rule followed for the rest of the sentence: ex.

C'est ne pas *connoître la cour* que de *se fier aux promesses qu'on y fait*,	He does not know the court who relies on the promises made there.
C'est ne pas *goûter les plaisirs de l'amitié* que de *n'aimer personne*,	Such as love nobody do not enjoy the pleasures of friendship.

This verb, *être*, to be, becomes also impersonal every time it is followed by a noun adjective used in a vague indeterminate sense, and relates to no particular object, in which case the verb is generally preceded by the pronoun *il*: ex.

Il est étonnant que, &c.	It is surprising, &c.
Il est nécessaire, &c.	It is necessary, &c.
Il est dangereux de, &c.	It is dangerous, &c.
Il est extraordinaire, &c.	It is extraordinary, &c.

When the English verb *to be* is used to denote the state of the weather, it must be rendered by the third person singular of the verb *faire*, to make or do:

Il fait *beau tems*,	It *is* fine weather.
Il fait *chaud*,	It *is* hot.
Il ne fait *pas chaud*,	It *is* not hot.
Fait *il chaud?*	*Is* it hot?
Ne fait-*il pas chaud?* &c.	*Is* it not hot? &c.

See the verb *FAIRE*.

The learner muſt obſerve that the following verb is abſolutely impersonal throughout all its tenſes, and that nothing is more diſagreeable than to hear young people ſay *je faut*, *vous faut*, *on faut*, &c. to prevent which, as much as poſſible, ſome examples are here ſet down.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Affirmatively.

Singular

Preſent. *Falloir*, to be needful, requiſite, neceſſary.
Part. paſſ. *Fallu*, been needful.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Affirmatively.

Singular.

Preſent. *Il faut que je* faſſe, I muſt do.
Il faut que tu faſſes, thou muſt do.
Il faut qu'il faſſe, he muſt do.
Il faut qu'elle faſſe, ſhe muſt do.

Plural.

Il faut que nous faſſions, we muſt do.
Il faut que vous faſſiez, you muſt do.
Il faut qu'ils, or *elles*, faſſent, they muſt do.

Negatively.

Il ne faut pas que je faſſe, I muſt not do.
Il ne faut pas que vous faſſiez, you muſt not do, &c.

Interrogatively.

Faul-il que je faſſe ? muſt I do ?
Faut-il que vous faſſiez ? muſt you do ?
Ne faut-il pas que je faſſe, muſt I not do ?
Ne faut-il pas que vous faſſiez, muſt you not do ?

Imperfect. *Il falloit qu'il* écrivît, it was neceſſary, &c. for him to write.
Preterite. *Il fallut qu'il* partît, he was obliged ſet out.
Future. *Il faudra qu'il* vienne, he muſt come, he ſhall be obliged to come.
Cond. pre. *Il faudroit que j'*allaſſe, I ſhould go, or it would be neceſſary for me to go.

SUB-

Subjunctive Mood.

Preſent. *Qu'il faille*, that it may be neceſſary, &c.
Imperfect. *Qu'il fallût*, that it might be neceſſary, &c.

As to the compound tenſes of this verb, they are formed by adding its participle paſſive to the third perſon ſingular of any of the ſimple tenſes of the verb *avoir*, to have: ex. *Il a fallu, il avoit fallu, &c.*

This verb, being uſed before the verb *to have*, followed immediately by a noun ſubſtantive, may be rendered without expreſſing the auxiliary verb; inſtead of which, inſert one of the following pronouns, *me*, *te*, *lui*, *nous*, *vous*, or *leur*, according to the number and perſon: ex.

Il me *faut des livres*, — I muſt *have* books, or I want books.

Il lui *faut un chapeau*, — He or ſhe muſt *have* a hat, or he or ſhe wants a hat, &c.

But if the verb *to have* be expreſſed, it muſt be rendered by the ſubjunctive mood: ex.

Il faut que j'aie des livres, — I muſt *have* books, &c.

This method however is not ſo elegant as the former.

From the above inſtances, it is eaſy to ſee, that, when the verb *falloir* is uſed in the preſent or future tenſes of the indicative mood, the following verb muſt be rendered by the preſent of the ſubjunctive: ex.

Il faut, or *il faudra*, *que je faſſe*, — I muſt *do*, I ſhall be obliged *to do*, or it will be neceſſary for me *to do*.

When *falloir* is uſed in the imperfect, preterite, or conditional preſent, of the indicative, the verb following it muſt be rendered by the imperfect of the ſubjunctive: ex.

Il falloit, or *il fallut*, *que je parlaſſe*, — I was obliged, or it was neceſſary for me, *to ſpeak*.

Il

Il faudroit que je vendiſſe. I ſhould be obliged, or it would be neceſſary for me, *to ſell.*

The ſame obſervation is to be made on the verb *valoir mieux*, to be better, uſed impersonally, and the adjectives, *bon*, *difficile*, *impoſſible*, *néceſſaire*, *à-propos*, &c. joined to the verb *être*, uſed in the third perſon ſingular only.

Before the concluſion of this ſection, it will be proper to ſay ſomething about the pronoun general *on*, which commonly precedes an active verb uſed impersonally in French, and in Engliſh is made by a paſſive verb: ex.

On *m'a permis de chanter*, I have been permitted, or allowed, to ſing.

On *lui a défendu de ſortir*, He has been forbidden to go out.

In this caſe, the verb, which in Engliſh is in the paſſive voice, muſt, in French, be turned into the active, and tranſlated as if there were, in Engliſh,

One has allowed me to ſing, *one* has forbidden him to go out: ex.

On *n'a pas encore reçu la nouvelle*, The news has not been received yet, that is, *one* has not yet received the news.

On *rapporte que les Ruſſes ont battu les Turcs*, It is reported that the Ruſſians have beaten the Turks.

On *le dit, mais* on *ne le ſait pas encore pour ſûr*, It is ſaid ſo, but it is not yet known for certain.

On *croit que la Suede a déclaré la guerre à la Ruſſie*, It is thought Sweden has declared war againſt Ruſſia.

EXERCISES UPON THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Does it rain? — No, ſir, it is fine weather. — Is it not very cold? — It is neither cold nor hot. — Was

froid, m. *ni*, adv. *ni*, adv.

it

it not you who told me (that) there was a man below
en bas,adv.
who aſked to ſpeak to me? — No, madam, it
demander,v. *à*
was not I. — If it did not freeze I would go to ſee them
voir,v.
to-day. — Believe me, it is better for you
aujourd'hui,adv. *valoir mieux*,v. †
to go there to-morrow, for it will ſnow ſoon. — It
demain,adv. *car*,c. *bientôt*,adv.
is a year ſince I met your brother in Italy. — Where is
he now? It is not known, for we have not heard from
him theſe two years. — Was there not formerly a
autrefois,adv.
(coffee-houſe) at the corner of this ſtreet? — I had been
caffé,m. *coin*,m. *rue*,f.
four years in England when that happened. — I have
arriver,v.
not ſeen your ſiſter theſe four months. — If you go to
Coxheath to-day, you muſt come back to-mor-
aujourd'hui,adv. *revenir*,v.
row. — We had been playing at cards for two hours
when you came in. — He has been in London theſe
entrer,v.
five years, and it is ſaid he there enjoys a conſiderable
employment. — My father and mother had not been

† After the words *better*, *neceſſary*, *needful*, *expedient*, &c. joined to the verb *to be*, conjugated impersonally, the preposition *for* is to be rendered by *que*, with the following verb in the ſubjunctive mood, either preſent or imperfect, according to the tenſe of the preceding verb.

gone

gone out above a quarter of an hour when he arrived.
ſortir,v. *plus*,adv.

—Some people have no pity on their poor (fellow-
gens,pl. *de* *ſem-*
creatures.) —— More virtue is requiſite to ſupport
blable.
good fortune than bad. —— They are ſtrangers to the
charms of ſociety who ſhun company. — Thomas will
fuir,v.
have been at Mr. H——'s academy two years the tenth
of next month. — Had not Mr. D. been four years in
Spain when his ſiſter was married? — Mr. N. had on-
ne
ly learned French four months when he wrote me a
que
letter in that language. — How long is it ſince you
Combien,adv.
wrote to your mother? —It[1] is[3] [2]but[4] two[5] months[6].—
ne que *mois*,m.
I would have written to you a month ago if I had
known your direction. — He is the ſame man whom
ſavoir,v. *adreſſe*,f.
we ſaw a quarter of an hour ago. — It is not ſo cold now
as it was at the beginning of this month. — It is ſaid
there will not be ſo much danger in travelling as
tant,adv. *à voyager*,v. *que*
there was before. — You muſt have been well ac-
aupāravant.
quainted with the places to expoſe yourſelf in that
endroit,m. *pour*,c *de*,p.
manner.

manner.—Would it not be better for you to go and ſpeak

to them yourſelf than to ſend your ſervant? ——
de envoyer, v. *domeſtique*, m. & f.

Shall I be obliged to carry them there?—There
falloir, v. *mener*, v.

is no going out to-day, it is too warm. — You muſt

get up to-morrow morning at four o'clock. — Will
ſe lever, v.

it not be better for you to be there too ſoon than too

late? — Some people fancy that they can learn a
s'imaginer, v.

language without ſtudying. — They are idle, who do
ſans, p.

not know the value of time. — Let there be danger or

not I will (go home.) — Do you think (that) it is
s'en retourner, v. *croire*, v.

hotter in Italy than here?—I ſhall want (or, I muſt
en, p. *Italie*, f.

have) paper, pens, and ink. — If he behaved well,
ſe comporter, v.

there would not be a man (in the) world that I ſhould
au monde, m.

eſteem more.—Much art and nicety are requiſite to
pour, p.

pleaſe every body. — They obey the commands of God

who love their neighbours and do not reproach them

with their ſmall defects. — I have already told you that

nobody in the world has prepoſſeſſed me againſt you;
contre, p.

how many times muſt I repeat it to you ?—(How long)
Combien,adv.
is it ſince your brother went to France ? —— It
eſt allé, v.
may be four months. — Have the letters been re-
pouvoir,v.
ceived which were expected yeſterday ?—It greatly
beaucoup,adv.
concerns children to avoid bad company. — I was in
enfant,m. *de éviter*,v.
England ten years ago. — Every body agrees there are
fine women in Great Britain, but there is not ſo good
wine as in France. — It may be two years ſince Mr.
Robert ſet out for the Indies. — Was it not you who
partir,v.
wrote to Miſs A— ? — No, it was Miſs Roſe's
avez écrit, v.
ſiſter. — It does not matter whether it is my ſervant or
yours who carries it. — How long is it ſince you were
porter,v.
in England ?—You do not ſeem to be as lively
paroître,v. *enjoué*,adj.
as you were three years ago. — Muſt I not ſhew
montrer, v.
you my work ? — If there were any real virtue in the
world, ſhould we (meet with) ſo many falſe friends ?—
trouver, v.
No object is more pleaſing to the eye than the ſight of
plaire,v. *vue*,f.
a man whom you have obliged, nor (is) any muſic ſo
agreeable

agreeable to the ear — as the voice of a man who
oreille, f. — *voix*, f.

owns — you for his benefactor.
reconnoître, v.

SECT. V.

Of PARTICIPLES.

Participles are either active or paſſive. The *participle active*, in French, always ends in *ant*: ex. *parlant*, *puniſſant*: and, in Engliſh, in *ing*: ex. *ſpeaking*, *puniſhing*, &c. It is always, in its own nature, indeclinable: ex.

Je vois des hommes et des femmes venant *à nous*, — I ſee men and women *coming* to us.

When the participle active is preceded by another verb, an article, or a prepoſition, it muſt be rendered in French by the verb in the infinitive mood: ex.

La grace de Dieu nous empeche de pécher, — The grace of God keeps us *from ſinning*.

Faut-il que je parte ſans *le* voir? — Muſt I ſet out without *ſeeing* him? &c.

It is ſometimes uſed as a ſubſtantive: ex.

La pauvreté *du corps eſt* la richeſſe *de l'âme*, — The *impoveriſhing* of the body is the *enriching* of the ſoul.

N. B. There are ſome active participles which, by uſe, have been converted into ſubſtantives or adjectives; as, *médiſant*, ſlanderer; *ignorant*, ignorant, &c. which are declinable.

The participle paſſive is ſometimes declinable and ſometimes indeclinable.

It is declinable,

Firſt, When it is joined to the verb *être*, to be, forming a paſſive verb, and agrees with the nominative caſe of the verb in gender and number: ex.

Mon frere eſt aimé,	My brother is *loved*.
Ma ſœur eſt aimée,	My ſiſter is *loved*.
Mes couſins ſont partis,	My couſins are *gone*.
Mes couſines ſont parties,	My couſins are *gone*.

Secondly, When it is joined to the verb *avoir*, or *être*, forming the compound tenſes of an active or reflected verb, immediately preceded by a *pronoun* which it governs in the *accuſative caſe*; it muſt then agree with the gender and number of the ſubſtantive to which that pronoun refers: ex.

J'ai parlé à votre frere, et l'ai prié *de venir diner avec moi,*	I ſpoke to your *brother*, and *deſired him* to come and dine with me.
Connoiſſez-vous Madame Wrighten? *Oui, je l'ai* vue, *et l'ai* entendue *chanter pluſieurs fois,*	Do you know Mrs. *Wrighten?* Yes, I *ſaw her*, and *heard her* ſing many times.
J'ai lu tous les livres que *vous m'avez* prêtés,	I have read all the *books (which)* you *lent* me.
Aves-vous vu les marchandiſes que *j'ai* reçues?	Did you ſee the *goods (which)* I have *received?*
Mademoiſelle B. a paſſé deux ou trois jours avec vos ſœurs, *et* les *a* vues *peindre,*	Miſs B. ſpent two or three days with your *ſiſters*, and *ſaw them* painting.
Vous m'*avez ſouvent* prié, *or* priée, *de*, &c.	You often *deſired me* to, &c.
Elles ſe *ſont* repenties *de leurs fautes,*	They have *repented* of their faults.

In the above inſtances the pronouns are governed by the verbs *avoir* or *être* and the participle paſſive.

Du, *pu*, and *voulu*, are excepted as being always indeclinable.

The

The participle paſſive is indeclinable in the following caſes:

Firſt, When the contrary to the above rule happens; that is, when the pronoun, though preceding the participle paſſive, is governed by another verb: ex.

Pluſieurs perſonnes ſe ſont préſentées à la porte, la ſentinelle les *a* laiſſé *paſſer*,	Several perſons came to the door, the centinel *let them* paſs.
C'eſt une belle chanſon, je l'*ai* entendu *chanter deux ou trois fois*,	It is a fine ſong, I *heard it* ſung two or three times.
La langue que *vous avez* commencé *d'apprendre eſt fort utile*,	The language you *began* to learn is very uſeful.
J'y ſuis allé avec elle, et l'*ai* vu *peindre*,	I went there with her, and *ſaw her* picture drawn.

In the above inſtances the pronouns are not governed by the participle paſſive, but by the verbs *paſſer*, *chanter*, *apprendre*, and *peindre*.

Secondly, When it is immediately followed by a noun (either ſubſtantive or adjective) in the accuſative caſe, or by another participle paſſive, though it ſhould be preceded by a pronoun: ex.

Les Anglois ſe *ſont* rendu *fameux dans cette guerre*,	The Engliſh have *made themſelves* famous (in) this war.
Les Eſpagnols ſe *ſont* trouvé *obligés de lever le ſiege*,	The Spaniards *found themſelves* obliged to raiſe the ſiege.
Ma ſœur s'*eſt* caſſé *le bras*,	My ſiſter *broke* her arm.

And, laſtly, when the auxiliary verb and the participle paſſive are uſed impersonally: ex.

Les pluies qu'il a fait,	The rains we have *had*.

In order to illuſtrate the application of the above rules in a ſingle example, we muſt write:

J'ai reçu *les lettres que vous m'avez* écrites *au ſujet*	I have *received* the letters which you *wrote* to me

de l'affaire que je vous avois propoſée : *et, après les avoir* lues *avec attention, j'ai* reconnu, *comme vous, que, ſi je l'avois* entrepriſe, *j'y aurois* trouvé *des obſtacles que je n'avois pas* prévus,

with reſpect to the affair which I had *propoſed* to you : and, after having *read* them with attention, I *perceived*, as you did, that, if I had *undertaken* it, I ſhould have *met* with obſtacles that I had not *foreſeen*.

In this period *reçu* is indeclinable, becauſe it is not preceded by any regimen ; *écrites* is declinable, and agrees in gender and number with its abſolute regimen, or accuſative, expreſſed by the pronoun relative *que*, which precedes the verb and relates to *lettres* ; *propoſée* likewiſe agrees with *que*, by which it is preceded and which relates to the word *affaire* ; *lues* is declinable on account of its regimen *les*, which precedes it and relates to *lettres* ; *reconnu* is indeclinable becauſes it is not preceded by any regimen to which it can relate ; *entrepriſe*, on the contrary, is declinable, and takes the gender and number of the conjunctive pronoun *l'*, which is its abſolute regimen and its antecedent, relating to *affaire* ; *trouvé* is indeclinable, becauſe it is not preceded, but followed, by its abſolute regimen *obſtacles* ; *prévus*, on the contrary, is declinable, becauſe it is preceded by its abſolute regimen *que*, which relates to *obſtacles*.

If cuſtom, in any caſe, has deviated from the preceding rules, it is ſufficient to obſerve, that they have the ſanction of the beſt authors. A little practice will ſoon remove many of theſe apparent difficulties.

PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE FOREGOING RULES.

I have not yet received the goods which *marchandiſe*, f.
you ſent me by the ſhip Goodwill. — They *vaiſſeau*, m.
are

are people truly fearing God and loving vir-
gens, pl. *vraiment*, adv. *craindre*, v.

tue. — Where did you buy theſe gloves? — I
Où, adv. *acheter*, v. *gant*, m.

bought them in France. — She met your father and ſiſ-

ter (as ſhe was) coming here. — His brother, remem-
en *ici*, adv. *ſe reſſou-*

bering the injuries he had received, refuſed to ſee
venir, v. *des* *refuſer*, v. *de voir*, v.

him. — I ſhall never forget the good actions which
oublier, v.

I have ſeen you do. — The defending of a bad cauſe is

worſe than the cauſe itſelf. — Your mother, having gi-

ven the neceſſary orders to my ſiſter, ſet out for Lon-
partir, v.

don without ſpeaking a word to me. — Miſs Farren
ſans, p. *dire*, v. *mot*, m.

is an excellent actreſs, I have ſeen her play ſeveral

times. — Of all the letters which my brother has re-

ceived (to-day,) there is not one (of them) for
aujourd'hui, adv.

me. — I am very ſorry (for the) trouble that affair
fâché, adj. *de la peine*, f.

has given to your aunt. — He was hanged for having
tante, f. *pendre*, v.

robbed Mr. D. — What books have you loſt? — The
voler, v. *perdre*, v.

fable I gave you to tranſlate is not difficult. — If
à traduire, v.

you can come with me, I will ſhew you the lady
montrer, v. *dame*, f.

whom

whom I have heard ſing. — Your ſiſter has render-
entendre, v.

ed herſelf celebrated by her wit and beauty. — What
célebre, adj. *eſprit*, m.

ſtuff have you choſen? — Have you already read the
étoffe, f. *choiſir*, v. *déja*, adv. *lire*, v.

books I ſaw you buying? —— Not yet; for I have
Pas, adv.

ſent them to my ſiſter, who is in the country. ——
à

They have found themſelves ſurrounded by the ſoldiers.

— I ſhould deſpiſe a man who is capable of deceiving
mépriſer, v. *tromper*, v.

his friends. — The fine actions your brothers have
ami, m. *beau*, adj.

done in America deſerve great praiſes. — Their
faire, v. *en*, p. *mériter*, v.

general has ſhewn them all the gratitude he ought.
témoigner, v.

— I have loſt the books which you have ſeen me buy-

ing. — The three country-houſes, which your father is

ſaid to have bought, are extremely fine and well ſitua-

ted. — The hiſtory, which I have begun to read, is not
à

entertaining. — After having (waited for) her (a long
amuſant, adj. *attendre*, v. *long*

while,) ſhe (ſent me word) that ſhe was not ready to
tems, adv. *envoyer dire*, v. *prêt*, adj. *à*

go out. — She ſpends all her time in reading or wri-
ſortir, v. *paſſer*, v. *à*

ting. — Did you not ſee us coming? — The rain
voir, v. *pluie*, f.

we

we have had this week has prevented me from going
empêcher, v.

into the country.—My ſiſter has bought herſelf a fine
à *acheter*, v.

gown. — My mother takes an infinite pleaſure in
prendre, v.

admiring the ſituation of your houſe. — The letter you
ſituation, f.

have written to me in French was tolerably well;
paſſablement, adv.

I have ſhewn it to your aunt, who is much pleaſed
montrer, v. *très*, adv. *content*, adj.

(with it.)
en, pro.

SECT. VI.

INDECLINABLE PARTS OF SPEECH.

Under this head are comprehended *adverbs*, *prepoſitions*, *conjunctions*, and *interjections*.

OF ADVERBS.

Adverbs have been diſtinguiſhed, according to their ſeveral ſignifications, into *adverbs* of *place*, *time*, *quality*, *quantity*, *number*, *order*, *affirmation*, *negation*, *doubt*, *interrogation*, *compariſon*, *collection*, *ſeparation*, &c. But this claſſification, however ingenious, is far from being exact: it was therefore judged, that, if thoſe of the moſt frequent uſe, and which, when compounded, form a particular idiom, were carefully ſelected, and arranged in an alphabetical ſeries, it would be more to the advantage of the learner.

TABLE

TABLE of ADVERBS.

Abondamment, abundantly, plentifully.
à l'Abandon, at random, in confuſion, in diſorder.
d'Abord, at firſt, immediately.
Abſolument, abſolutely.
d'Accord, grant it, done.
Agréablement, pleaſantly, comfortably.
Ainſi, *(de même,)* ſo.
Aiſément, eaſily.
mal Aiſément, much ado.
dans un An d'ici, a year hence.
l'Année qui vient, the next year.
Anciennement, *Autrefois*, } formerly, antiently.
en Ami, friendly.
à l'Amiable, amicably.
en Arriere, *à reculons*, } backwards.
Aſſez, enough.
Aſſurément, certainly.
Aujourd'hui, to-day.

Time to come. { *d'Aujourd'hui en huit*, this day ſe'night. *d'Aujourd'hui en quinze*, this day fortnight.

Time paſt. { *il y a Aujourd'hui huit jours*, this day week, this day ſe'night. *il a Aujourd'hui quinze jours*, this day fortnight. *il y a Aujourd'hui un an*, this day twelvemonths.

Autant, as much, as many.
d'Autant plus, ſo much the more.
d'Autant moins, ſo much the leſs.
tout Autant, *tout Auſſi*, } juſt as, juſt as muſt, every whit.
à l'Avenir, for the future, hereafter.
à l'Angloiſe, after the Engliſh manner, faſhion, or way.
à l'Italienne, after the Italian, &c.
à la Françoiſe, after the French, &c.
à la Turque, after the Turkiſh, &c.

Bas,

Bas, } below, down.
à or *en Bas*, }
en Badinant, for fun.
Beaucoup, } much, many, a great deal.
Bien, }
à Beaucoup près, nothing ſo near.
de Beaucoup, by much.
Bien, well, very.
de Bon cœur, heartily.
de Bonne heure, betimes.
de Bonne foi, } ſincerely.
ſincerement, }
de Bon jeu, fairly.
de Bon matin, early.
de Bouche, by word of mouth.
à la Bonne heure, in good time, luckily, well and good.
à Bon droit, deſervedly.
à Bon marché, cheap.
à Bride abbatue, full ſpeed.

Ça et là, to and fro.
à Cauſe de quoi? on what account?
à Cela près, that excepted.
Cependant, in the meanwhile, nevertheleſs.
à Cheval, on horſeback.
Combien, how much, how many, how,* how long.
Combien y a-t-il que, or
Combien de tems y a-t-il que,
Combien y avoit-il que, } how long?†
Depuis quand,
Combien de tems,
pendant Combien de tems,

dans

* *How much, how many, how*, are rendered in French by *que*, before an admiration: ex.

Que *vous êtes jolie!* *How* pretty you are!

† We make uſe of *combien y a-t-il que*, or *depuis quand*, when the action mentioned in the interrogation has not yet ceaſed; then the verb, which (in Engliſh) is in the preterite indefinite, muſt be rendered (in French) by the preſent of the indicative mood: ex.

Combien

dans Combien de tems, how long will it be before.
Comme, as, like.
Comme il faut, ſoundly.
Comment, how.
à Contre cœur, againſt one's will.
à Contre ſens, the contrary way, in a wrong ſenſe.
à Contre tems, unſeaſonably.
à Corps perdu, hand over head, deſperately.
à Côté, *à l'écart*, *à part*, *à quartier*, } aſide.
à Côté l'un de l'autre, abreaſt.
de ce Côté-ci, on this ſide.
de ce Côté-là, on that ſide.
de Côté et d'autre, up and down, about.

Combien y a-t-il que *vous apprenez*, or depuis quand *apprenez-vous*, *le François?* — *How long* have you learned French?

Combien y a-t-il que *vous êtes*, or depuis quand *êtes-vous*, *à Londres?* — *How long* have you been in London?

If the verb (in Engliſh) be in the preterpluperfect, it is to be rendered (in French) by the imperfect of the indicative: ex.

Combien y avoit-il que *vous appreniez*, or depuis quand *appreniez-vous*, *le François quand vous m'écrivîtes?* — *How long* had you been learning French when you wrote to me?

Combien y avoit-il que *vous êtiez*, or depuis quand *êtiez-vous*, *à Paris quand il mourut?* — *How long* had you been in Paris when he died.

But, if the action have entirely ceaſed, we make uſe of *pendant combien de tems*, with the following verb in the preterite indefinite: ex.

Pendant combien de tems *avez-vous appris le François?* — *How long* did you learn French?

Pendant combien de tems *avez-vous été à Londres?* — *How long* were you in London?

N. B. How long, in the ſenſe of *for what time*, is alſo rendered by *pendant combien de tems*, with the verb in the ſame tenſe as it is in Engliſh: ex.

Pendant combien de tems *votre ſœur ſe propoſe-t-elle de reſter en Italie?* — *How long* does your ſiſter intend to ſtay in Italy?

de tous Côtés, on all ſides, on every ſide.
Coup ſur Coup, one after another.

Davantage, more.
Dedans, } within.
en Dedans, } inwardly.
Dehors, } without.
en Dehors, }
Déja, already.
Demain, to-morrow.
le lendemain, the day after.
après Demain, the day after to-morrow.
Dernierement, lately.
ci Deſſus, above.
par Deſſus, over and above.
Deſſous, } underneath.
au Deſſous, }
à Découvert, openly.
à Demi, } half, by halves.
à moitié, }
à Deſſein, on purpoſe, deſignedly.
à Droite, on the right.
à Double entente, with a double meaning.

Encore, again, yet, as yet.
Enfin, at laſt.
Enſuite, afterwards, then.
Entierement, entirely.
Exprès, on purpoſe.
à l'Ecart, out of the way.
à l'Entour, round about.
à l'Envers, the wrong ſide outwards.
à l'Envi, in emulation.
aux Environs, thereabout.
En nulle maniere, in no wiſe.
En plein jour, } at noon, at mid-day.
or }
En plein midi, }
En tems et lieu, in a proper time and place.
En tout cas, whatever may happen.

En un clin d'œil, in the twinkling of an eye.
En ſurſaut, ſuddenly.

Facilement, eaſily.
Fidelement, faithfully.
à la, or *de*, } *File*, in a file.
à la Fois, together.
combien de Fois? how many times?
une Fois, once.
deux Fois, twice.
tant de Fois, ſo many times.
Fort, very.
Fort et ferme, ſtoutly.
à Fond, thoroughly.
de Fond en comble, from top to bottom, to all intents and purpoſes.
de Front, abreaſt.

Galamment, genteelly, gallantly.
Goute à goute, by drops.
Guères, (with *ne* before the verb,) little, but little.

à la Hâte, in haſte.
en, or *là*, } *Haut*, up there, above, up-ſtairs.
d'Heure, en heure, hourly, every hour.
Hier, yeſterday.
Hier au ſoir, laſt night.
avant Hier, the day before yeſterday.

Ici, here.
Ici autour, hereabouts.
Ici près, hard by.
d'Ici, hence.
d'Ici en quinze jours, within a fortnight.
par Ici, through here, this way.
par Ici par là, here and there.
à l'Inſtant, immediately, inſtantly.

Jamais,

Jamais, ever, never.
à Jamais, for ever.
Juſtement, juſtly.
Juſqu'à quand? how long?
Juſqu'ici, hitherto, as far as here.
Juſques-là, ſo far, as far as that.
Juſqu'où? how far?
de Jour, in the day-time.
de Jour à autre, or *de Jour en Jour*, } from day to day, daily.
de deux en deux Jours, *de deux Jours l'un*, or *tous les deux Jours*, } every other day.
dans quinze Jours, in a fortnight.

Là, there, thither.
Là autour, thereabouts.
Là bas, yonder.
de Là, (*en*,) thence.
par Là, through there, that way.
Loin, far.
de Loin, afar off, at a diſtance.
Long tems, a long while.
Lors, then, at the time.
alors, *pour Lors*, } then.
dès Lors, from that time.

Mal, ill, wrong.
Maintenant, now.
Médiocrement, indifferently.
Même, even, yet.
de Même, ſo, in the ſame manner.
Mieux, better.
de Mieux en Mieux, better and better.
Moins, leſs.
Moins —— Moins, the leſs —— the leſs.
à Moins, for leſs, at leſs.
au Moins, *tout au Moins*, } at the leaſt.
en Moins de rien, in a trice.

Naïvement, plainly, ingenuouſly.
Naturellement, naturally, by nature.
au Naturel, to the life.
Ni —— *ni*, neither —— nor.
Non pas, or *point*, } no, not.
Non, }
de Nuit, by night, in the night-time.

Obligeamment, kindly, obligingly.
Où? where?
d'Où? whence?
par Où? through what place? which way? through which?
Oui, yes.
d'Outre en Outre, through.

Pas à pas, ſtep by ſtep.
de Part et d'autre, on both ſides.
nulle Part, no where.
à Peine, hardly, ſcarcely.
Pêle-mêle, helter-ſkelter.
Peut-être, may be, perhaps.
Peu, little.
Peu à Peu, by little and little, by degrees.
à Peu près, } almoſt, very near, thereabouts.
à Peu de choſe près, }
dans Peu, in a ſhort time.
depuis Peu, lately, not long ago, a little while ago.
à Pied, on foot.
à Pieds nuds, bare-feet.
au Pis aller, let the worſt come to the worſt.
de Pis en Pis, worſe and worſe.
de Plein gré, with a good will, freely.
de Plein pied, on the ſame floor.
à Pleines mains, largely.
Plus, more, above.
Plus —— *Plus*, the more —— the more.
Plus qu'il n'en faut, more than enough.
au Plus, *tout au Plus*, at the moſt.
de Plus en Plus, more and more.
à Plus forte raiſon, much more ſo.

Plutôt,

Plutôt, ſooner.
Point du tout, not at all.
à Point nommé, ſeaſonably.
tout à Point, in the nick of time.
à Propos, ſeaſonably.
Pourquoi? or *que ne?* why?
de Près, near, nearly, narrowly.
Premierement, or *en Premier lieu*, } firſt, in the firſt place.
dès à Préſent, from this time.
Preſque, almoſt, hardly.
Preſque toujours, moſt commonly.
de Propos délibéré, on purpoſe, purpoſely, deliberately.
Par cas fortuit, by chance, accidentally.
Par derriere, behind.
Par deſſus le marché, into the bargain.
Par en bas, downward.
Par en haut, upward.
Par malice, through ill-nature.
Par mégarde, unawares.
Par terre, upon the ground.

Quand? when?
depuis Quand? how long is it ſince?
Que? why? how?
Quelquefois? ſome time.
à Quoi bon? to what purpoſe?

Rarement, ſeldom.
au or *du Reſte*, as to the reſt.
à Rebours the wrong way.
à la Renverſe, *à Reculons*, } backward, upon one's back.
à Rez de chauſſée, even with the ground.

Sens devant derriere, prepoſterouſly.
Sens deſſus deſſous, topſy-turvy.
de tous Sens, or *de tous les Sens*, } every where.
Séparément, ſeparately.

Seulement, only.*
de Sang froid, in cold blood.
de Suite, together, one after another.
Sur le champ, directly, upon the ſpot.

Tant, ſo much, ſo many.
Tant mieux, ſo much the better.
Tant pis, ſo much the worſe.
Tantôt, by and by, ſometimes.
Tantôt —— *Tantôt*, ſometimes —— ſometimes.
Tôt, *bientôt*, } ſoon.
Tôt ou Tard, one time or other.
Tant ſoit peu, ever ſo little.
Tard, late.
à Tems, time enough, in proper time.
de long Tems, for a long time, this long while.
de Tems en Tems, or *de Tems à autre*, } now and then, from time to time.
à Tort, wrongfully.
à Tort ou à droit, right or wrong.
à Tort et à travers, at random.
Trop, too much.
Toujours, always, now-a-days.
pour Toujours, for ever and ever.
Tous les jours, every day.
Tour à Tour, by turns.
Tout, quite, wholly, thoroughly, entirely.†
Tout à coup, ſuddenly, on a ſudden, all at once.
Tout bas, ſoftly, with a low voice.
Tout d'un coup, ſuddenly, on a ſudden, all at once.
Tout à fait, quite.
Tout à l'heure, this minute, preſently.

* *Only* is alſo expreſſed, in French, by *ne* before the verb and *que* after it, when it becomes a conjunction.

† This adverb takes the nature of a noun adjective, and becomes declinable, in French, when placed before another adjective feminine beginning with a conſonant: ex.

Ces femmes paroiſſoient tout *effrayées et* toutes *conſternées*, — Theſe women ſeemed *quite* frightened and *quite* diſmayed.

Tout droit, ſtrait along.
Tout de bon, in good earneſt.
Tout du long, all along.
Tout franc, frankly, freely.
Tout haut, aloud.
Tout outre, through and through.
à Tout bout de champ, } at every turn.
à Tous corps, }
à Tous égards, in all reſpects.
de Toutes ſes forces, with all his, or her, might.
par Tout, every where.
par Tout où, wherever.

Vite, } quickly.
Vitement, }
Vivement, } to the quick.
au Vif, }
à Vide, empty.
au plus Vite, with all ſpeed.
Voici, here is, behold.
Voilà, there is, behold.
à Vue d'œil, perceptibly.

Y, there, therein, within, thither.

EXERCISES ON THE PRECEDING ADVERBS.

Your ſiſter left all her things IN DISORDER.—
laiſſer, v.
I hope you will not do ſo. — You did not know me AT FIRST. — A YEAR HENCE you will (be able) to ſpeak French TOLERABLY WELL. — My father ſays I ſhall go to* France THE NEXT YEAR. — Your brother and mine have ſettled their affairs AMICABLY. —
régler, v.

* See the article indefinite.

She dreſſes herſelf QUITE AFTER THE ENGLISH
s'habiller, v.
FASHION, but ſhe lives AFTER THE FRENCH WAY.
vivre, v.
— Your ſiſter has a cap AFTER THE TURKISH
bonnet, m.
FASHION. — If it be fine weather I ſhall be (back)
de retour
THIS DAY FORTNIGHT. — You may ſay what
pouvoir, v.
(you pleaſe,) but ſhe is NOTHING NEAR ſo handſome
il vous plaira, v.
as her ſiſter. — We will get up EARLY, and ſet out
Je lever, v.
BETIMES. — I wiſh you A GREAT DEAL of pleaſure.
— It (is better) to tell it him BY WORD OF MOUTH
valoir mieux, v.
than to write to him. — I was SO MUCH THE MORE
convinced of what you told me, that I diſmiſſed him
renvoyer, v.
THIS DAY MONTH. —— THIS DAY WEEK I was
(at your houſe.) — If you do not do it HEARTILY, I
chez vous.
will do it myſelf. — We ſaid it FOR FUN. — THAT
EXCEPTED, he has bought it VERY CHEAP. — Have
I not won FAIRLY? — You ſee to HOW MANY
gagner, v.
dangers and HOW MANY reproaches we are liable, —
expoſé, p.p.
How dare you run ABOUT whilſt your mother
pendant que, c.
(is waiting for) you. — Miſs B. is handſome; NEVER-
attendre, v.

THELESS I do not love her. — Put that ASIDE. — He arrived VERY UNSEASONABLY. — We went THERE AGAINST OUR WILL. — They drank three bottles of wine ONE AFTER ANOTHER. — Let us walk ON THIS SIDE. — We learn ON EVERY SIDE that peace (will *a-*
take place) VERY SOON. — Have they not been beaten *voir*, v. *lieu*, m.
SOUNDLY? — Come TO-MORROW MORNING to ſee me. — I was LATELY (at your houſe,) and your brother took all that I ſaid to him IN A WRONG SENSE. — I have heard that your ſiſter will be married IN A SHORT TIME. — She was WITHIN and I was WITHOUT. — We were more than HALF dead. — Take all theſe papers and put them OUT OF THE WAY. — You have put on your waiſtcoat THE WRONG SIDE OUTWARDS. — I was ſtopped AT NOON. — We will tell him what we think IN A PROPER TIME AND PLACE. — He did it IN THE TWINKLING OF AN EYE. — I have written to your brother TWICE, but he has NOT YET anſwer- *répon-*
ed my letters. — How MANY TIMES ſhall I be o- *dre*, v. *à*
bliged to bid you (to) go THERE? — How[1] trou- *de dire*, v. *de* *impor-*
bleſome[4] you[2] are[3]! — My brother knows the French *tun*, adj.
THOROUGHLY. — How LONG have you been in England? — How LONG did he learn French? — How LONG had you been in Italy when you wrote to me? — I have told you SO MANY TIMES to write to your mo-
ther

ther that I am QUITE weary of repeating it. — *fatigué*, p.p.
Give him BUT LITTLE wine. — Is Mr. D. UP STAIRS? Come THIS WAY. — HOW MANY miles are there from HERE to Hampton-Court? — There[2] muſt[1] be[3] A *il doit*, v.
GREAT DEAL of game HEREABOUTS. — I will call *gibier*, m. *paſſer*, v.
upon your brother WITHIN A FORTNIGHT. — Come *chez*, p. *Reve-*
back IMMEDIATELY. — HOW ſorry I am for ha- *nir*, v. *fâché*, adj. *de*
ving diſpleaſed you! — I NEVER will ſee him again. — How FAR will you go? — My maſter comes HERE EVERY OTHER DAY. — HOW LONG have you learned mathematics? — HOW FAR is it HENCE? — I ſhall go to Richmond IN A FORTNIGHT. — HOW LONG do you intend to ſtay THERE? — If you go *ſe propoſer*, v. *reſter*, v.
THAT WAY you may call at Mr. H—'s. — *pouvoir*, v. *paſſer*, v. *chez*, p.
HOW MUCH I ſhould be obliged to you if you would grant me that favour! — FROM THAT TIME I ſaw him NO MORE. — They are NOW in England. — He will not do it FOR LESS. — THENCE I went to France, and SOON after to Italy. — HOW LONG were you in *après*, p.
Germany? — She has written three letters IN A TRICE. *Allemagne*, f.
— Virtue is amiable EVEN in an enemy. — You *dans*, p.
work BETTER than your ſiſter. — She reads French
BETTER

BETTER AND BETTER, but ſhe writes WORSE AND WORSE. — THE LESS you work, THE LESS you will improve. — There are NOW in America 30,000 men AT THE LEAST. — Did you ſee Miſs Nicole's picture? — It is drawn TO THE LIFE. — I (aſked for) a glaſs of wine and NOT a glaſs of water. — How LONG have your brothers been at Mr. L—'s academy? — WHERE did you meet them? — Did not they tell you WHENCE they came? — WHICH WAY are they gone? — The hole, THROUGH WHICH (they made their eſcape,) was ſo ſmall that I do not know HOW they could get out. — I will follow you STEP BY STEP. — Have you dined? — NOT YET. — AT LAST the rebels retired into the woods with a great loſs. — The fight was cruel and bloody, and (was kept up) a LONG TIME with an equal advantage ON BOTH SIDES. — If you give me a verb, I will learn it LITTLE BY LITTLE. — She is as tall as you, or THEREABOUTS. — WHY did not you come SOONER? — HOW LONG has that gentleman been waiting for me? — I have written three letters, NEITHER MORE NOR LESS. — You are ABOVE twenty years old. — You give me MORE THAN ENOUGH? — You come VERY SEASONABLY. — You are HARDLY EVER at home. — How LONG did Mrs. B. wait for me? — They killed him PURPOSELY.

faire des progrès.

portrait,m. *fait*,p.p. *demander*,v.

verre,m.

s'échapper,v.

se retirer,v. *dans*,p. *bois*,m. *perte*,f.

combat,m. *ſanglant*,adj. *ſe maintenir*,v.

PURPOSELY. —How LONG has he been dead? — I met him BY CHANCE. — You ſtudy MORE THAN EVER. — He gave me three yards of muſlin INTO *mouſſeline*,f.
THE BARGAIN. — If I have done that to oblige *pour*,p.
you, I will MUCH MORE SO do it for her. — THE MORE we are above others, THE MORE it be- *au-deſſus de*,p.
comes us to be modeſt and humble. — Virtue reigns SO MUCH THE MORE SOVEREIGNLY as it does not reign by force and fear. —We dine MOST COMMONLY be- *en-*
tween three and four o'clock.—Our eating-room is E- *tre*,p.
VEN WITH THE GROUND. — Shall I begin UPWARDS or DOWNWARDS? —— Begin UPWARDS. —— He has torn my book OUT OF ILL-NATURE. — WHEN *déchirer*,v.
ſhall I have the pleaſure to ſee you?—How LONG had *de*
your friend been in his regiment when he died?—How *à*
LONG was he ill?—TO WHAT PURPOSE ſhall I write to him? — WHY do you walk BACKWARDS? — *marcher*,v.
You SELDOM come to ſee us?—Do DIRECTLY what *ce*
I bid you. — She has left all things TOPSY TUR- *dire*,v.
VY.—He committed the murder IN COOL BLOOD. *meurtre*,m.
—We will dance BY TURNS.——Do you believe it IN

GOOD

GOOD EARNEST. —GO STRAIGHT ALONG. — WHY do not you come to ſee us NOW AND THEN? — SOMETIMES I am at my uncle's in London, and SOMETIMES at my grandfather's in the country. — You arrive TOO LATE. —— She ſpeaks AT EVERY TURN without knowing what ſhe ſays. — Have patience, I hope you will ſucceed ONE TIME OR OTHER. —I have (looked for) you EVERY WHERE. — She can find it NO WHERE. —He ſtruck me WITH ALL HIS MIGHT. — She is better than her ſiſter IN ALL RESPECTS. — I will follow you WHEREVER you go. — Her misfortunes touch me TO THE QUICK. — My ſiſters were QUITE tranſported with joy when they heard the happy news of the victory. — GO WITH ALL SPEED to Mrs. Lucas, and tell her to come DIRECTLY. — HERE IS my room, and THERE IS yours.

chez, p. *à*, p. *ſans*, p. *ſavoir*, v. *chercher*, v. *frapper*, v. (by the fut.) *malheur*, m *de*, p. *chez*, p. *de*

SECT. VII.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

Prepoſitions are divided into the three following claſſes. Firſt, thoſe that govern the genitive or ablative

 caſes.

caſes. Secondly, thoſe that govern the dative. And, laſtly, thoſe that govern the accuſative.

Firſt, The following governs the genitive or ablative.

Autour de, about, round.
à Cauſe de, becauſe of.
à Cauſe de vous, de lui, d'elle, de nous, &c. on your, his, her, our, &c. account.
à Côté de, aſide, by.
à Couvert de, free, ſecure, or ſcreened, from.
à Fleur de, cloſe to, even with.
à Force de,* by dint of.
à Moins de, under.
à Raiſon de, at the rate of.
à l'Abri de, ſheltered from.
à l'Egal de, to, in compariſon.
à l'Egard de, with regard, with reſpect, as to, concerning.
à la Faveur de, by means of.
à l'Inſçu de, without the knowledge of, unknown to.
à la Maniere de, } in or after the manner, or faſhion.
à la Mode de, }
à l'Oppoſite de, } over againſt.
or
Vis à Vis de, }
au Deça de, } on this ſide.
en Deça de, }
au Delà de, on that ſide, on the other ſide.
au Dehors de, out, without.
au Deſſus de, above, over, upon.
au Deſſous de, under, below.
au Devant de, before.
aller *au Devant de*, to go to meet.
au Derriere de, behind, on the back part.
au Dedans de, in, within.
au Lieu de, inſtead of.
au Milieu de, in the middle of.
au Prix de, in compariſon.
aux Environs de, about, round about.

* This prepoſition is ſometimes Engliſhed by *with* : ex.
Il pleure à force de rire, He cries *with* laughing.

Enſuite

Enſuite de, after.
Faute de, for want of.
à la Hauteur de, (ſea term,) off.
Hors de, out.
le Long de, along.
Loin de, far from.
Près, or *Proche de*, *Auprès de*, } near, or nigh, by
pour l'Amour de moi, de lui, d'elle, de vous, &c. for my ſake, for his, her, your, ſake, &c.
tout Auprès de, cloſe, hard by.

Secondly, The following govern the dative.

Conformément, according, purſuant.
Juſqu'à, or *Juſques à*, } till, until, even to, as far as, to
Par rapport à, with reſpect to, on account.
Quant à, as for, as to.

Thirdly, The following require the accuſative.

Après, after.
d'Après, after.*
Avant, before.
Avec, with.
à Travers, croſs, through.
Chez, in, to, at, amongſt.
Chez moi, chez toi, chez lui, chez elle, chez nous, &c. at or to my, thy, his, her, our, &c. houſe.
Contre, againſt.
Dans, in, into, within.
Depuis, ſince, from.
Derriere, behind.
Dès, from.
Devant, before.
de Deſſus, from the top.
de Deſſous, from under, from beneath.

* We make uſe of this prepoſition in the following ſenſe only:
Il peint d'après *un bon maître*, He paints *after* a good maſter.

Durant, during.
En, in, into, to, like.
Entre, between.
Envers, towards, with regard to.
Environ, about.
Excepté, *Hors*, *Hormis*, } except, but, ſave.
Moyennant, for, provided.
Nonobſtant, *Malgré*, } notwithſtanding, in ſpite.
Outre, beſides.
Par, by, through.
par Deça, on this ſide.
par Delà, on that ſide.
par Derriere, behind.
par Deſſus, about, over.
par Deſſous, under, below.
Parmi, among.
Pendant, during, for.
Pour, for.
Sans, without.*
Sauf, ſaving, but with.
Selon, *Suivant*, } according to.
Sous, under.
Sur, upon, about.
Touchant, concerning, about.
Vers, towards, to.

* This prepoſition is ſometimes rendered (in Engliſh) by the imperfect or preterpluperfect of the verb *to be*, preceded by the conjunction *if*, and ſometimes by *but for* : ex.

Sans *vous, je ne ſais ce que je deviendrois*,	*If* it *were* not for you, I do not know what would become of me.
Sans *lui, mon frere auroit été puni*,	*Had* it not *been* for him, my brother would have been puniſhed.
Sans *elle, je ſerois mort de faim*,	*But for* her, I ſhould have been ſtarved.

OBSER-

OBSERVATIONS ON SOME PREPOSITIONS.

ABOVE. This preposition, when preceding a noun expressing *time* or *number*, so as to be turned by *more than* or *longer than*, is to be made in French by *plus de*: ex.

Le combat dura plus de *deux heures*,	The fight lasted *above* two hours.

AT is most commonly rendered by *à*, and sometimes by one of the French articles *au*, *à la*, *à l'*, *aux*, according to the gender and number of the noun following: ex.

Nous étions à *diner*,	We were *at* dinner.
Vous n'étiez pas au *logis*, or *chez vous*,	You were not *at* home.
Je vous payerai à la *fin de l'année*,	I will pay you *at* the end of the year.
Il eſt allé à l'*égliſe*,	He is gone to church.
On dit que vous jouez très bien aux *cartes*,	It is ſaid you play very well *at* cards.

After *nouns* or *verbs* denoting *anger*, *deriſion*, *joy*, *provocation*, *reſentment*, *ſorrow*, *ſurpriſe*, or *concern*, *at* is rendered by one of the following articles, *de*, *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*: ex.

Il ſe moque de *vous*,	He laughs *at* you.
Je me rejouis du *bonheur qui vous eſt arrivé*,	I rejoice *at* the good fortune that has befallen you.
Nous ſommes ſurpris de *ce que vous dites*,	We are ſurprized *at* what you ſay.

At is made by *chez* when in Engliſh it precedes the word *houſe*, either expreſſed or underſtood: ex.

J'étois chez *votre frere*,	I was *at* your brother's.
Elle eſt chez *ſa tante*,	She is *at* her aunt's.

That is, at your brother's houſe, at her aunt's houſe.

N. B. The ſame rule is to be obſerved with reſpect to the preposition *to*.

BY, when it precedes a verb in the participle active, is rendered by *en* : ex.

Vous parlerez bientôt François en *vous appliquant ainſi*,	You will ſoon ſpeak French *by* applying ſo.

By, after the verbs *to ſell*, *to buy*, and the like, preceding a noun of *weight* or *meaſure*, is made into French by *à*, *au*, *à la*, *à l'*, *aux*, according to the gender and number of the following noun : ex.

Nous ne vendons rien à la *livre*,	We ſell nothing *by* the pound.
Vous achetez toujours à l'*aune*,	You always buy *by* the ell.

The above prepoſition, immediately following the verbs *to kill*, *to wound*, *to knock down*, and the like, is made into French by *d'un coup de*, when it expreſſes the effect, blow, thruſt, ſtroke, firing, &c. of an inſtrument by which a man was either killed, wounded, &c. provided the blows have not been repeated : ex.

Il fut bleſſé d'un coup de *fleche*,	He was wounded *by* an arrow,
Il fut aſſommé d'un coup de *pierre*,	He was knocked down *by* a ſtone.
Ils furent tués d'un coup de *canon*,	They were killed *by* a cannon-ball.

If the blows, ſtrokes, thruſts, &c. have been repeated, we make uſe of *à coups de*, in which caſe it is moſt commonly rendered in Engliſh by the prepoſition *with* : ex.

Ils le tuerent à coups de *fleches*,	They killed him *with* arrows.
Il l'aſſomma à coups de *bâton*,	He knocked him down *with a* ſtick.

FOR, after *reflected verbs*, as alſo thoſe which denote *thankſgiving*, &c. is rendered by one of the following articles, *de*, *du*, *de la*, *des* : ex.

Je

Je me repens de *ce que j'ai fait*,	I repent *for* what I have done.
Il m'a prié de vous remercier de la *part que vous avez prise dans son affaire*,	He desired me to thank you *for* the part you took in his affair.

FROM, preceding the name of a *man* or *woman*, or one of the *personal*, *possessive*, *relative*, or *interrogative*, pronouns, after the verbs *to go*, *to come*, *to send*, &c. is generally made in French by *de la part de*, or *de ma*, *de sa*, *de notre*, *de votre*, *de leur*, *part*: ex.

De la part de *qui venez-vous?*	*From* whom do you come?
Je viens de la part de *M. D——*,	I come *from* Mr. D—.
Allez de ma part *chez Madame R——*,	Go *from* me to Mrs. R—'s.

IN, after words denoting *pain*, *hurting*, or *wounding*, and preceding one of the possessive pronouns in conjunction with any part of the body, is to be rendered by one of the following articles, *à*, *au*, *à la*, *à l'*, *aux*, and the possessive pronoun left out: ex.

J'ai mal à la *tête*,	I have a pain *in my* head.
Il étoit blessé au *bras et non* à la *jambe*.	He was wounded *in his* arm and not *in his* leg.

In, when placed before the article *the*, preceding a noun denoting a part of time, is not to be expressed at all in French: ex.

Vous le trouverez toujours chez lui le matin,	You will always find him at home *in* the morning.

ON or UPON. This preposition is made by *de*, after the verbs *to depend*, *to live*, *to subsist*, and the like: ex.

Il vit de *pain et* d'*eau*, He lives *on* bread and water:

and by one of the following articles, *de*, *du*, *de la*, *de l'*, *des*, after the verb *to play*, preceding the name of an instrument: ex.

Vous

Vous jouez du *violon*, de la *flute*, — You play *on* the fiddle, *on* the flute.

Before the days of the week, the above prepoſition muſt not be expreſſed: ex.

Venez Vendredi de bonne heure, — Come *on* Friday early.

On, preceding the words *foot*, *horſeback*, meaning the ſtate of walking or riding, is rendered by *à*: ex.

J'étois à *pied et elle étoit* à *cheval*, — I was *on* foot and ſhe was *on* horſeback.

OVER is made by the participle paſſive of the verbs *finir*, *paſſer*, *achever*, when it denotes an action ended: ex.

Votre frere partit dès que la pluie fut paſſée, — Your brother ſet out as ſoon as the rain was *over*.

WITH is to be rendered by *dans* when it is uſed before nouns denoting the *purpoſe*, *deſign*, or *motive*, in the agent: ex.

Il le fit dans *l'attente d'être bien récompenſé*, — He did it *with* an expectation of being well rewarded.

Mon frere eſt allé chez vous dans *le deſſein de bien vous gronder*, — My brother is gone to your houſe *with* a deſign of ſcolding you well.

But it muſt be made by *de* after the following verbs, *to ſtarve*, *to die*, *to do*, *to diſpenſe*, *to meddle*, *to encompaſs*, *to ſurround*, *to load*, *to accuſe*, *to cover*, *to ſtrike*, and thoſe denoting fullneſs; likewiſe after the following adjectives, *amorous*, *charmed*, *pleaſed*, *diſpleaſed*, *endowed*, &c. ex.

Elle meurt de *froid et* de *faim*, — She ſtarves *with* cold and hunger.

Ils ne ſavent que faire de *leur argent*, — They do not know what to do *with* their money.

Je ſuis content de *ce que j'ai*, — I am pleaſed *with* what I have.

With

With is rendered by *contre* after words denoting *anger* or *paſſion* : ex.

Madame votre mere eſt fachée contre *vous*,	Your mother is angry *with* you.

With, before nouns denoting the *matter*, *inſtruments*, *tools*, or expreſſing how and in what manner a thing is done or made, is rendered by one of the following articles, *à*, *au*, *à la*, *à l'*, *aux*, according to the gender and number of the following noun : ex.

Une table à *tiroirs*,	A table *with* drawers.
Bâtir à *chaud et* à *ſable*,	To build *with* lime and ſand.
Deſſiner au *crayon*, à la *craie*,	To draw *with* a pencil, *with* chalk.
Se battre à *l'épée*, au *piſtolet*,	To fight *with* ſwords, *with* piſtols.

The above prepoſition is not to be expreſſed after ſome verbs, ſuch as, *to meet with*, *to ſupply with*, *to reproach with*, &c. ex.

Il a eſſuyé bien des chagrins,	He has met *with* many troubles.
Je lui reprochai ſon ingratitude,	I reproached her *with* her ingratitude.
Nous lui fournirons tout ce dont il aura beſoin,	We will ſupply him *with* every thing he wants.

It is likewiſe to be ſuppreſſed when it expreſſes the *ſituation*, *poſition*, &c. of a perſon, or when it is uſed in the ſenſe of *having*, *holding*, &c. ex.

Il ſe promene toujours un livre à la main,	He always walks *with* a book in his hand;

that is, having or holding a book, &c.

EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

I have ſent nothing to your brother BECAUSE OF his idleneſs, but I forgive him ON YOUR ACCOUNT. — Sit down

down BY that lady's ſiſter. — Though we are
Quoique, c. (in the ſubj.)
NEAR town, we are not yet SECURE FROM all danger.
— He is become a very good maſter BY DINT OF ſtudy
and practice. — Cut that ſorrel EVEN WITH the
ozeille, f.
ground. — He will not ſell it UNDER twelve gui-
terre, f. *vouloir*, v.
neas. — As TO what ſhe ſays, I do not mind it,
ſe ſoucier de, v.
but I cannot help being ſurpriſed AT her manner
s'empêcher, v.
of anſwering. — All the priſoners (made their eſcape)
s'échapper, v.
BY MEANS of the darkneſs of the night. — Your bro-
obſcurité, f.
ther is gone to London WITHOUT THE KNOWLEDGE
of your mother. — Now the Engliſh ladies (dreſs them-
s'habiller, v.
ſelves) AFTER THE French FASHION. — I give you
all my books EXCEPT the Hiſtory of France. — Why
did you not play on the fiddle ON Friday laſt? — Do
not you ſay that you met my father ON THE OTHER
SIDE OF the bridge. — We now live ON THIS SIDE OF
the river; and, if you will come to ſee me, we will fiſh
WITH a net or a line. — Mrs. A. is very proud, ſhe
filet, m. *ligne*, f.
thinks herſelf ABOVE every body. — I am going to MEET
my aunt, will you come WITH me? — He took my hat
INSTEAD of his. — Let us go INTO THE MIDDLE OF
the meadow. — You always travel by night AT the pe-
ril of your life. — Do not meddle WITH my affairs,

meddle

meddle WITH your own. — Your horſe (is worth)
valoir,v.
very little IN COMPARISON OF his. — He walks two
or three times a day ROUND the garden WITH a ſtick
fois,f. *
in his hand, and only lives ON milk and vegetables. —
légumes,m.
We drank tea, AFTER which we went to the play. —
prendre,v. *comédie*,f.
I can do nothing FOR WANT OF money. —
pouvoir,v. *faire*,v.
How do you meaſure your cambric, BY the ell or BY
batiſte,f.
the yard? — Do not puſh me OUT OF the room. —
pouſſer,v.
We will walk BY the river. — They were OFF the Cape of Good Hope when they were taken; ABOVE five hundred men periſhed in the action. — We are ſtill FAR from our houſe. — I met your friend Mr. A. NEAR the church. — My mother was buried NEAR this marble pillar. — I do aſſure you (that) I do it FOR YOUR SAKE. — ON June the 8th, 1736, died Edward, prince of Wales, the delight of the nation, IN the 46th year of his age. The parliament accompanied his corpſe TO Canterbury, where he was interred. —— Mrs. Fair lives in the Strand, OVER AGAINST Catha-
demeurer,v.
rine-ſtreet. — My brother bought yeſterday twenty pair of ſilk ſtockings AT THE RATE of fourteen ſhillings and ſix-pence a pair. — He has been puniſhed PURSUANT to an act of parliament. — We have ac-
parlement,m.

* Remember the obſervations after the article *un, une*, a or an.

companied

companied them AS FAR AS Barnet; there they fought
ſe battre,v.
WITH ſwords and piſtols: your brother was wounded IN the arm, and my couſin IN the head. — As FOR me, I will not give him a penny. — He arrived here an hour AFTER you. — Let me drink BEFORE you.
Laiſſer,v.
—Did you not ſee her walk WITH her father? — You miſtake, they were both ON horſeback.—Are you not ſatisfied WITH the behaviour of your ſon Thomas?—
content,adj. *conduite*,f.
He behaved LIKE an honeſt man IN that affair. — Miſs A. paints AFTER nature. — Did ſhe ſhew you the picture ſhe has drawn WITH Indian ink? — No, but ſhe
Chine,f.
ſhewed me her mother's picture done WITH chalk; I
craie,f.
aſſure you it is very like. — It was the antient
reſſemblant,adj.
Britons who cut a road THROUGH this mountain.
Breton,m. *chemin*,m.
—Are you going TO Mrs. L—'s?—No, I am going TO YOUR HOUSE; but, ſince I have met you, we will go TO MY HOUSE, where we ſhall dine. — ACCORDING TO what you tell me and what I have heard, ſhe has a great deal of wit and merit; and, BUT FOR that large ſcar ſhe has IN her forehead, ſhe would be
cicatrice,f.
very handſome. — Do not lean AGAINST that
s'appuyer,v.
wall, it is newly painted WITH oil. — Go INTO my room;

room; you will find a letter BEHIND the looking-glaſs,
miroir, m.
(be ſo kind as) to bring it to me.—Do not put your-
avoir la bonté de
ſelf BEFORE me, and never ſpeak to any body WITH your hat ON your head.—Go FROM me TO Mrs. B's, and tell her I ſhall be glad to ſee her.—No, ſtay: tell her you come FROM my couſin, who has ſomething to ſhew her.—FROM this moment I believe you, but I was very angry WITH her when ſhe told me ſhe
fâché, adj.
would not do it.—Be not ſurpriſed AT it, ſhe often has been accuſed WITH indifference TOWARDS her beſt friends. — I have read this book FROM the beginning TO the end.—We ſaw the camp FROM THE TOP OF the hill.—He always goes out WITHOUT me. — He poiſoned his brother WITH the hope of inheriting his
hériter, v.
eſtates. — The army marched three days and three
bien, m.
nights WITHOUT ſtopping. — At laſt the king, ha-
Enfin, adv.
ving broken his battle-axe and ſword BY the force
hâche d'arme, f.
of his blows, was knocked down WITH a ſtone and
renverſé, p. p.
taken priſoner. — IN what does happineſs² conſiſt¹ ?
fait, p. p.
—If you wiſh to be happy and eſteemed IN this world, live LIKE a man of honour and probity.— Thence we went TO France and Italy.—It is reported on all ſides that Paris is to be ſurrounded WITH walls.—My maſ-

ter comes generally IN the morning.—We are BETWEEN fear and hope daily.—Be not unjuſt TOWARDS your neighbours.—It was ABOUT four o'clock when
prochain,m. *Il*
we ſet out. —Take all that you pleaſe EXCEPT my ſword.—UPON what inſtrument does your ſiſter play? — She plays very well ON the harpſichord, and ſhe is now learning to play ON the harp.—He will do it FOR two guineas.—I thank you FOR your kindneſs. — IN France they drink coffee as ſoon as dinner is OVER.—
on
I walk every day NOTWITHSTANDING the bad weather.—I hope you will ſucceed IN your undertaking IN ſpite OF Mrs. Slander.—BESIDES his own money he ſpends all his ſiſter's. — It is ſaid (that) Gibraltar is blocked up BY land and BY ſea. — I have paſſed
bloquer,v.
THROUGH France and Italy.—Let us ſee whether you
ſi,c.
can jump OVER the table.—You may go and walk
ſauter,v.
when the rain is OVER.— William the Second was killed BY an arrow IN the New Foreſt. — We have paſſed THROUGH Germany. — Look UNDER the door
Allemagne,f.
and you will ſee it. — Envy, jealouſy, and ſlander,
médiſance,f.
always reign AMONG authors.—What have you done DURING my abſence?—Your aunt has ſent me ſome books FOR you.—WITHOUT him what could I have done?—He was ſo mortified AT the diſobedience of his ſons, that, THROUGH grief, he became ill, and died.
tomber,v.

—IF

—IF IT HAD NOT BEEN FOR me he would not have paid you.—Do I not live* ACCORDING TO the rules
ſi *vivre*, v. *regle*, f.
you have preſcribed?—I found your buckle UNDER
préſcrire, v. *boucle*, f.
the chair. — You ſaid you had left it UPON the ta-
laiſſer, v.
ble. — I have no money ABOUT me. — Did he not write to you CONCERNING that affair? —It was TOWARDS the evening when we arrived.

SECT. VIII.

OF CONJUNCTIONS.

Moſt of the conjunctions are adverbs and prepoſitions, but always attended by *de* or *que*. They have been divided into *copulative*, *comparative*, *disjunctive*, *adverſative*, *caſual*, *dubitative*, *exceptive*, *conditional*, *continuative*, *concluſive*, &c. Inſtead of following this arrangement, it will be of more importance for the ſcholar to underſtand that different conjunctions require different ſtates of the verbs. Some require the following verb in the *infinitive mood*, others in the *indicative*, and others again in the *ſubjunctive*.

Theſe require the following verb in the *infinitive mood*.

Afin de, in order to.
à Moins de, or *à Moins que de*, } unleſs.
Avant de, better *Avant que de*, } before.

* See the *N. B.* before the exerciſes upon the firſt conjugation.

Au lieu de, inſtead.
De crainte de, } for fear of.
or
De peur de, }
Excepté de, except to.
Faute de, for want of.
Juſqu'à, to that degree that, till.
Loin de, far from.
Plutôt que de, rather than.

The following require the verb in the *indicative*.

Ainſi que,* as.
tout Ainſi que,* juſt as.
Après que,* after that, aft r.
à Cauſe que, } becauſe.
or
parceque, }
à Ce que, according as, or to.
à Condition que,* on or upon the condition that.
à Meſure que,* in proportion as, as.
Au lieu que, whereas.
Auſſitôt que, } *as ſoon as.
D'abord que,
Dès que,
Sitôt que, }
Dès le moment que,* the moment that.
Auſſi long tems que,* as long as.
Auſſi loin que,* as far as.
Attendu que, conſidering that, ſeeing that.
Comme, } *as.
or
Entant que, }
De façon que, } in ſuch a manner that, ſo that.
De maniere que,
De ſorte que,
Si bien que,
Tellement que,
Depuis que, ever ſince, ſince.
Puiſque, ſince.

De même que, even as.
D'où vient que, how comes it to paſs that, why.
Lorſque, or *Quand*, } *when.
Mais, but.†
Outre que, beſides that.
à Peine—que, hardly, ſcarcely,—but, than, or when.
Pendant que, *Tandis que*, } *whilſt, while.
Peut-être que, perhaps.
Quand, *Quand même*, } though.
Que —— ne, than,‡ only.
Selon que, *Suivant que*, } * according as.
Tant que,* as long as.
Autant que,* as much as.
d'Autant que, whereas, for ſo much as, ſince.
d'Autant plus — que, ſo much more, the more — as.
Toutes les fois que, every time, as often as, whenever.
Sinon que, except that.
Si, if, in caſe, whether.

This laſt conjunction, inſtead of being repeated in a ſentence, is more elegantly rendered by *que*, with the verb following it in the ſubjunctive mood, as, inſtead of ſaying,

Si *vous venez chez moi, et ſi vous ne me trouvez pas*, *If* you call upon me, and do not find me at home,

it is more elegant to ſay,

Si *vous venez chez moi, et* que *vous ne me* trouviez *pas*, &c.

Que muſt alſo be repeated in the ſecond part of a ſentence, as well as the pronoun, when there is a conjunction

† This conjunction, when it begins a ſentence, is always rendered by *mais*. In the middle of a ſentence, the word *but* is always rendered by *ne* before the verb and *que* after it.

‡ *Que* before the noun and pronoun, and *ne* before the verb.

in the firſt part of it; in this caſe *que* requires the following verb to be put in the ſame mood as the preceding: ex.

Dès que *je l'*aurai vu *et* que je *lui* aurai parlé, *je vous le ferai ſavoir*,	*As ſoon as* I *have ſeen* him and *ſpoken* to him, I will let you know it.
Quoiqu'il ſoit *plus riche que vous et* qu'il ait *de meilleurs amis*,	*Though he be* richer than you and *have* better friends.

(*) The conjunctions, that have this mark affixed, when followed, in Engliſh, by a verb in the preſent tenſe of the indicative mood, and connected with another verb denoting futurity, require the verb, which, in Engliſh, is put in the preſent, to be rendered, in French, by the future.

The following require the verb in the *ſubjunctive mood.*

Afin que, *Pour que*, } that, in order that, to the end that.
Avant que, before that.
Au or *en cas que*, in caſe that, if, ſuppoſe that.
à Moins que,† *Excepté que*, *Si ce n'eſt que*, *Que —— ne*, } unleſs, till.
Bien que, *Encore que*, *Quoique*, } though, although, for all that.
Bien entendu que, with a proviſo that, upon condition that, provided that.
De crainte que,† *De peur que*, } leſt, for fear.
Dieu veuille que, God grant.
Plaiſe or *plut à Dieu que*, pleaſe God, or would to God.
à Dieu ne plaiſe, God forbid.

† Theſe conjunctions require the negation *ne* before the following verb: ex.

De crainte, or *de peur*, *qu'ils* ne *viennent*,	For fear they come.
A moins qu'il ne *faſſe*,	Unleſs he do it.

Hormis

Hormis que, } ſave that.
Hors que, }
Juſqu'à ce que, till, until.
Loin que, far from.
Moyennant que, } ſave that.
Pourvû que, }
Nonobſtant que, notwithſtanding that.
Pour peu que, how little ſoever.
Sans que, without that.
Soit que, whether —— or.
Suppoſons que, let us ſuppoſe that.
Tant s'en faut que, it is ſo far from.

EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

IN ORDER TO learn well, one muſt ſtudy with a
devoir, v.
great deal of attention. — It will be impoſſible for you
ſe
to learn French UNLESS you be diligent. — Let us
de *ſe*
breakfaſt BEFORE we begin (any thing.)—He is gone
ſe *rien.*
to church INSTEAD OF coming with us. — I would
not do it FOR FEAR OF diſpleaſing you.—FAR FROM
exciting them to fight, I did all that I could to
à ſe battre, v. *pour*, p.
prevent them.—She would do (any thing) (in the) world
tout *au*
RATHER THAN ſpeak to him. — I love you BECAUSE
ſe
you behave better THAN your brother does.—He
ſe comporter, v.
will write to you ON CONDITION THAT he ſhall ſpeedi-
prompte-
ly

ly receive your anſwer.—My mother will come
ment, adv.
to ſee you, PROVIDED you promiſe me to go to the play
with her.—We were HARDLY arrived WHEN it began
to rain.—I called at your ſiſter's AS you (had) deſired
à *paſſer*, v.
me.—So THAT you ſaw her and ſpoke to her.—She
ſaid nothing to me, EXCEPT THAT it was impoſſible
for her to do what you required of her.—I will explain
theſe rules to you AS we read them.—WHEN ſhe had
done ſpeaking ſhe (fell aſleep.)—As SOON AS
fini, p.p. *de* *s'endormir*, v.
they had taken the general, all the army ſurrendered.—
We will ſet out AS SOON AS we have dined.—As
LONG AS you (keep company with) thoſe people never
fréquenter, v.
come to my houſe.—HOW COMES IT TO PASS THAT
I have not ſeen you till now?—You (look at) me AS
regarder, v.
IF I had taken your book.—You are quite altered
changé, p.p.
SINCE I ſaw you laſt.——You muſt ſtay at
dernierement, adv.
home SINCE you are* not well.—Did you not ſee Mr.
Brown this morning?—Yes, BUT I could not ſpeak
to him.—IF you could give me BUT the half of the
money you owe me I ſhould be very much obliged to
you.—HOW COMES IT THAT your ſiſter has not yet
ſent me the books I lent her a fortnight ago?†—As

* See the exerciſes on the reflected verb.
† See the verb *y avoir* conjugated impersonally.

SOON AS I have dreſſed myſelf and breakfaſted I will go to ſee him.—Your brother was* BUT twenty years old WHEN he was made a captain.—He had more experience THAN you have. — Send Miſs White to me WHEN ſhe has done writing.—WHILST you play
fini, p p *de*
and loſe your money your ſiſter is learning her leſſon. — We muſt pity him who has no talent, and ONLY deſpiſe him who has no virtue.—Play on the harpſi-
clavef-
chord WHILE I write my letters.—If you would love to
ſin, m. *à*
ſtudy AS MUCH AS you love to play I ſhould have (no occaſion) to complain.—I puniſh you AS you de-
aucun ſujet, m.
ſerve.—AS LONG AS you behave well you will
ſe comporter, v.
be dear to me.—That would give me more pleaſure THAN you imagine. — I have been at the play
s'imaginer, v. *comédie*, f.
BUT twice this year.—I ſee the king and queen EVERY TIME I go to Windſor.—IF your father do not arrive to-day, and IF you want money, I will lend
avoir beſoin
you ſome.—He interrupts me AS OFTEN AS I ſpeak. —BESIDES THAT he never ſtudies, and is always in the country, he has not ſo much wit as his ſiſter.—IF you ſhould ſee your ſiſter, and ſpeak to her, &c.—I will explain to you every difficulty, (IN ORDER) THAT you may take courage and learn well.—IF you ſtudy and take pains, I aſſure you that you

* See the remark after the verb *être*, to be.

will

will learn the French language in a very ſhort time.—Carry that money to Mrs. N. (IN ORDER) THAT ſhe may pay the writing-maſter WHEN he comes. — Did you not receive your goods BEFORE war was declared?—In caſe Mr. —— calls here, tell him I am not at
paſſer, v.
home.—You cannot finiſh (to-night) UNLESS I help
ce ſoir *aider*, v.
you.—IF you love me, and are willing to oblige me, do not go to France with her.—She ſhall not go into
à
the country UNLESS I go with her.—I ſhall not ſet out TILL I have dined.—I will not lend it to you UNLESS you promiſe me to return it to her ſoon. — They are
de rendre, v.
not happy THOUGH they be rich. — THOUGH you ſhould have the beſt maſter in England, and learn all the rules of the grammar, IF you do not put them in practice you will never ſpeak good French. — We avoided an engagement FOR FEAR, or LEST, we ſhould
éviter, v.
be taken, their force being ſuperior to ours. —This proceeding was THE MORE extraordinary AS it was contrary to the laws of the kingdom.—WOULD TO GOD I had been there, I would have conquered or periſhed.—GOD FORBID I ſhould blame your conduct. —GOD GRANT you may ſucceed in all your undertakings and be not diſappointed in your hopes. — Why did you tell me my father was arrived, NOTWITHSTANDING you knew the contrary. — I am going to write TILL we go out. — HOWEVER LITTLE you give

give her, ſhe is always pleaſed.— I will give you leave to dance PROVIDED you promiſe me not to overheat *de de s'échauffer*, yourſelf. — Can you touch it WITHOUT my brother's perceiving it? — SUPPOSE we dine here to-day, and to-morrow at our houſe. — He[2] IS SO FAR[1] FROM deſpiſing[4] her[3].

N. B. It is here neceſſary to obſerve, that verbs denoting *wiſh*, *will*, *command*, *deſire*, *doubt*, *fear*, *ignorance*, *intreaty*, *perſuaſion*, *pretenſion*, *ſurpriſe*, &c. always require the conjunction *que* after them, with the following verb in the *ſubjunctive mood*. In ſhort, in thoſe *diſpoſitions* of mind where the will is chiefly concerned, or whenever we expreſs a thing with ſome degree of *doubt* or *heſitation*, then the verb, which in Engliſh is put in the infinitive mood, the participle active, or the future tenſe, muſt, in French, be put in the ſubjunctive mood: ex.

Je veux qu'il faſſe *cela*,	I will have* him *do* that.
Je doute que *vous le* faſſiez	I doubt of your *doing* it.
Je ne crois pas qu'*elle* vienne,	I do not believe ſhe *will come*,

See *FALLOIR*, and the rules after it.

* It may be ſeen, by this inſtance, that, after the verb *vouloir*, the verb *to have* is not expreſſed, but rendered in French by *que*. It muſt alſo be obſerved that the ſign of the future tenſe, *ſhall*, when it refers to the will of a perſon, and meaning *I chooſe*, *I do not chooſe*, *do you chooſe*, &c. muſt be rendered in French by the preſent tenſe of the indicative mood of the verb *vouloir*, according to the number and perſon, with the following verb in the ſubjunctive mood: ex.

Je veux que *vous me montriez cette lettre*,	You *ſhall* ſhew me that letter, that is to ſay, I *chooſe* you ſhould ſhew me that letter.
Je ne veux pas *que votre frere ſorte aujourd'hui*,	Your brother *ſhall* not go out to-day.
Voulez-vous *que je danſe?*	*Shall* I dance? that is to ſay, do you *chooſe* I ſhould dance? &c.

Qui,

Qui, *que*, or *dont*, preceded by a ſuperlative, require the following verb in the ſubjunctive mood : ex.

C'eſt la plus belle *femme* qui puiſſe *ſe voir*, or que *je* connoiſſe,	She is *the handſomeſt* woman *that can* be ſeen, or *that* I *know*.

When *qui* ſtands as nominative to a verb, denoting a condition, it alſo requires the following verb to be put in the ſubjunctive mood : ex.

Je veux une femme qui ſoit *belle*,	I will have a wife *that is* handſome.

that is, *on condition*, *provided*, ſhe be handſome.

EXERCISES UPON THE PRECEDING RULES.

.I do not believe that your mother will arrive to-day. —She wiſhes you may ſucceed in all your under- *pouvoir*, v.

takings. — You would have her return to-morrow, *vouloir*, v. *revenir*, v.

but that is impoſſible. —I fear ſhe (will go away) *craindre*, v. *s'en aller*, v.

without ſpeaking to me.—I will have your father know what you have done, you muſt ſtay here till he comes. *reſter*, v.

— I much fear he will come ſooner than you expect *attendre*, v.

him.—Do not you ſay you are ſurpriſed that he has not written to you ? for my part I do not wonder at it, for *quant à moi*

he is the moſt negligent man I know.—Do you think he will ſucceed and obtain the place he aims at ?— *aſpirer*, v.

Your mother would have you come directly : why *vouloir*, v.

do not you come then ?—You wiſh him to pay you ; he

he has no money; I am obliged to lend him ſome every
de
day. — If you believe him to be your friend, why then do not you follow his advice? — It is neceſſary for
que
you to go there, and aſſure him that he has done nothing that ought (to make me angry.) — I wonder that Mr.
devoir, v. *fâcher*, v.
R. has not yet aſked your ſiſter in marriage. — He is the moſt charitable man we have in this neighbourhood, his purſe is always open to any one who is poor and induſtrious. — Did you not tell me you (ſought for)
chercher, v.
a maſter who had a good pronunciation and a great deal of patience? — I know nobody that improves
faire des progrès
more than Miſs K——; and, when ſhe was learning French, had ſhe learned it by rule, ſhe would ſpeak, write, and tranſlate, now much better than Miſs S—, though ſhe was two years in France. — If you meet her, and* ſhe ſpeak to you, do not anſwer her. — Order her to do it. — I abſolutely intend that ſhe ſhall
vouloir, v.
go there directly, and tell him, that, whether he be ill or well, I will have him ſet out as ſoon as he has received my letter. — Do you imagine we are ſure they
s'imaginer, v.
will come to-night? — Has not your brother ſome friends to whom he can truſt? — Do you think it is poſſible
ſe fier, v. *croire*, v.
for you (to bring it about?) — Your father has bought
de en venir à bout, v.

* See the remark on the conjunction *ſi*, if.

the fineſt horſe that I have ever ſeen. — It is juſt we ſhould ſuffer, ſince we deſerve it. — I do not ſay I
ſouffrir, v. *mériter*, v.
have ſeen it. — He (was afraid) leſt you ſhould come
craindre, v. *que ne*
whilſt he was (gone out.) — You did not think that ſhe
ſortir, v.
wanted to deceive you when ſhe told you that? — I
vouloir, v.
wonder you ſhould doubt that it is your daughter
être ſurpris, v.
who, &c. — Is there any lady of five-and-twenty years that appears more reaſonable than ſhe does? — My father would have me walk all the way. — Our maſter has ordered that we ſhould get up to-morrow morning early. — Do you think my mother will let us go to the ball next week? — Your ſiſter ſhall go with me to Croydon and not you. — If you ever chooſe a friend, I wiſh you may chooſe one whom you eſteem and who may be an honeſt man. — Were Mr. S. diſcreet and willing to undertake that affair I would communicate it to him immediately. — It will be better for you to go and ſpeak to him yourſelf whilſt he is in town; I do not doubt of his undertaking it, he is the moſt diligent and the moſt careful man we have in this country. — However, I would not have you do things too precipitately, conſult ſomebody who is your friend and on whom you can rely. — Were I certain that you would ſpeak to him about it, I would deſire him to come and dine with us to-morrow; for, I am to ſee him to-night

at

at his brother's. — Shall my brother ſhew you his tranſ-
lation? — Do you know any body who is going to
France? I have ſomething to ſend to my ſiſter. —
à
Yes, I know a gentleman who is going to Paris: ſhall
I tell him to (call upon) you? — Your uncle is very
de paſſer chez
glad you have written to your father. — I will give you
no reſt unleſs you be reconciled with your mother. —
que ne
I do not believe it is ſhe who has done it. — Do you
believe it? — Babylon was the fineſt city that ever was
built. — The beſt reaſon I can give you is, that I
pouvoir, v.
was not well. — If you lend me a horſe, lend
ſe porter, v.
me one that goes well.

SECT. IX.

OF INTERJECTIONS.

Interjections, as before obſerved, ſerve to expreſs the ſudden emotions of the ſoul.

There are ſeveral ſorts, viz.

Of *joy*, *grief*, *pain*, *admiration*, *averſion*, *ſilence*, *calling*, *encouraging*, *warning*, &c. ſuch as,

Allons, gai! come, be chearful!
ça courage! come, come on!
Bon! good!
Ah, mon Dieu! oh, my God!

Ah, ouida! ay, marry!
Ha, quelle joie! oh, joy
ô ciel! O heaven!
Fi, fie! fy upon!
Hola, ho! ho there!
Malheur à! woe to!
Miſéricorde! bleſs me!
Prenez garde, garre! have a care!
Paix, chut, ſt ſt! hiſt, huſh!
Silence! Silence!

EXERCISES UPON THE INTERJECTIONS.

COME, friends, let us rejoice! — GOOD! here are
ſe réjouir, v.
news for your, brother. — FY, FY! Robert, you do
not think of what you ſay. — OH! that modeſty is
penſer, v. *à* *que*
a lovely virtue! — Why do you not endeavour to ac-
s'efforcer, v. *de* ac-
quire it? — ALAS! who could expreſs the torments
quérir, v.
I ſuffer here! — WOE TO you! uſurers, miſers, un-
uſurier, m. *avare*, m.
juſt poſſeſſors of (other people's) goods, hearken to theſe
autrui, pro. *bien*, m. *écouter*, v.
words, The treaſures of iniquity (will be of no ſervice)
parole, f. *ne ſervir de rien*
to you. — OH! (lazy people,) go to the ant, con-
pareſſeux, adj. *fourmi*, f.
ſider what ſhe does, and learn from her wiſdom and in-
duſtry. — BLESS ME! I am undone! — HUSH there!
perdu, p. p.
SILENCE! — OH! the diſmal effects which lazineſs
funeſte, adj.
produces!

produces! —How[1] tremendous[8] an[2] office[3] is[7] that of[4]
terrible, adj. *le*
a[5] judge[6]! What wiſdom, what integrity, what know-
ſci-
ledge, what ſagacity of mind, what experience, (are re-
ence, f. *ne faut-il*
quired!)
pas avoir;v.

REMARKS AND EXERCISES ON THE WORDS *de*, *à*, AND *pour*.

Having, in this manner, gone through the reſpective parts of ſpeech, there will be no neceſſity for a ſyntax. It will however be neceſſary to give ſome rules for aſcertaining the proper uſage of the particles *de* or *à*, and the prepoſition *pour*, before a verb in the infinitive mood, and then to point out, by way of exerciſe, ſome idiomatical expreſſions that moſt frequently occur in the French tongue.*

When two verbs come together in a ſentence, the latter, having no ſubject expreſſed or underſtood, muſt be put in the infinitive mood, whether the Engliſh ſign *to* be prefixed or not.

In the following caſes, the infinitive mood muſt never be preceded by a particle.

Firſt, when the verb in the infinitive ſtands nominative to another verb: ex.

Aimer *eſt un verbe*, *To love* is a verb.

Secondly, after the following verbs, *aller*, *croire*, *devoir*, *faire*, *il faut*, *ſavoir*, *valoir mieux*, *venir*, *pouvoir*, *oſer*, *vouloir*, and *penſer*, when rendered by *to be like* or *near*.

* The great number of idiomatical expreſſions in the French language has long been conſidered as an almoſt inſuperable difficulty in the way of its eaſy acquirement; however, this difficulty is daily decreaſing; theſe peculiar expreſſions are now giving way to a regular conſtruction, and are very little uſed by the beſt writers.

EXERCISES UPON THIS RULE.

To know how to give ſeaſonably is a talent every body has not. — To be able to live with one's ſelf and to know how to live with others are the two great ſciences of life. — I had rather do it now than later.
aimer mieux, v.
— Why dare you not undertake it? I think you may succeed. — He ſays he will lend you his gun with all his heart, becauſe you know how to make uſe of it. — Ariſtotle, though ſo great a philoſopher, was never able to penetrate the cauſe of that prodigy. — Tell him that he may ſet out when (he pleaſes.) — You never could come more ſeaſonably. — We are to go to Vauxhall to-morrow. — I am going to ſee your brother. — (Is it not better) to ſet out now than to wait any longer? — If you think to oblige her, you miſtake. — We were to have had a ball yeſterday, but my ſiſter was not well. — You did very right, for you ought not to ſpeak to him. — I had like to have fallen twenty times coming here. — To inſtruct, to pleaſe, and move the paſſions, are the three principal qualifi-
pouvoir, v. *réuſſir*, v. *fuſil*, m. *ſe ſervir*, v. *il lui plaira*, v. *pouvoir*, v. *valoir mieux*, v. *de attendre*, v. *plus* *ſe tromper*, v. *bien*, adj. *car*, c. *devoir*, v. *penſer*, v.

cations

cations requiſite in an orator. — If you would read
vouloir, v.
this book, I could lend it to you for four or five
pouvoir, v.
days.

The particle *de* is put before a verb in the infinitive mood: firſt, when any of the following words, *of*, *from*, or *with*, are uſed before the participle active of any verb. (See the *N. B.* upon the participle active.)

Secondly, after a noun ſubſtantive joined immediately to a verb, either without any article at all, or with the following articles, *le*, *la*, or *les*.

Thirdly, after theſe and the like adjectives, *decent*, *glad*, *impoſſible*, *neceſſary*, *ſorry*, *worthy*, *vexed*, &c.

Fourthly, after the following verbs: *to adviſe*, *to apprehend*, *to bid*, *to ceaſe*, *to command*, *to conjure*, *to counſel*, *to defend*, *to defer*, *to deſerve*, *to deſire*, *to endeavour*, *to fear*, *to haſten*, *to intreat*, *to long*, *to order*, *to permit*, *to perſuade*, *to pray*, *to pretend*, *to promiſe*, *to propoſe*, *to refuſe*, *to remember*, *to threaten*, *to tell*, *to warn*, *to undertake*, &c. and the greateſt part of the reflected verbs.

And, laſtly, after the conjunction *que*, preceded by the comparative degree.

EXERCISES ON THIS RULE.

I have deſired your brother to lend me ſome money.
prier, v.
— My mother ordered me to tell you to go and ſpeak
ordonner, v.
to her directly. — Did you not permit him to go out
ſortir, v.
this morning? — I am ſurpriſed to find you ſo ill. — I have not deſired you to play. — Bid your ſiſter to
Dire, v. *à*
ſend

ſend me my book. — We were afraid of diſpleaſing you. — What do you adviſe me to do in ſuch a caſe? *conſeiller*, v.

— My ſiſter and I intend to (call upon) you on Fri- *paſſer*, v. *chez*, p.

day next. — I am very glad to hear you are bet- *apprendre*, v.

ter. — She does not pretend to ſpeak French as well *ſe piquer*, v.

as you. — We are tired of repeating to you the ſame things ſo often. — If you finiſh your exerciſe ſoon you will have the pleaſure of walking whilſt the others will have the trouble of working. — It is neceſſary to tell her not to go there (any more,) for ſhe would be in *ne* *plus*, adv.

danger of loſing her life. — Endeavour to pleaſe your *à*

maſters by your application to ſtudy. — Do not you re- member having ſaid you would carry me to the *de* *mener*, v.

camp? — Do not they deſerve to be encouraged who *mériter*, v.

undertake to ſerve the public? — We are all glad to hear you have overcome your enemies; we ſhould have been ſorry to have heard the contrary. — What a fool *s'*

you are to grieve ſo when you have ſo much reaſon *s'affliger*, v.

to rejoice. — When do you purpoſe to ſet out for the country? — Never expect to ſpeak French well unleſs you practiſe very much. — I ſhall never refuſe to do *rendre*, v.

you ſervice as long as it is in my power. — Have you

a mind to do what you have promiſed me? — I can-
envie, f.

not give you the book you aſked me for, my brother has not (thought fit) to ſend it to me back again. —
juger à-propos, v.

I deſired you to bring your ſiſter with you; why did you not?* — I forbid you to ſpeak or write to him
défendre, v.

(any more.) — Would you not be very glad to read
davantage, adv.

and ſpeak Italian? — Condemn the opinion of no one haſtily, but endeavour to regulate your own by the
s'efforcer, v.

line of truth. — Who can hinder me from ſpeaking
vérité, f. *empêcher*, v.

or writing to her? — (Give me leave) to tell you that
Permettre, v.

you do very wrong to diſoblige your aunt. — He
mal, adv.

(was not contented) to demoliſh the temple and pull
ſe contenter, v. *ab-*

down the ſtatues, but, &c. — Is there any thing
battre, v.

more glorious than to change anger into friendſhip! —
(I long) to ſee your mother and tell her all that I
Il me tarde, v.

think (about it.)
en, pro.

The particle *à* is to be placed before a verb in the infinitive mood: firſt, after the auxiliary verb, *avoir*,

* *Do it* is underſtood, and muſt be expreſſed in French.

to

to have, immediately followed by a ſubſtantive or an adverb, expreſſing a futurity in the action: ex.

J'ai pluſieurs lettres à écrire, I have many letters *to* write.

Secondly, after nouns ſubſtantive joined to the verb *avoir*, or nouns adjective joined to the verb *être*, ſignifying to be *addicted*, *apt*, *bent*, *diligent*, *diſpoſed*, *dreadful*, *eaſy*, *fit*, *hard*, *inclined*, *quick*, *ready*, *ſubject*, *uſed*, &c.

Thirdly, after the following adjectives, *admirable*, *good*, *dexterous*, *handſome*, *ſcarce*, the *laſt*, the *firſt*, the *ſecond*, &c.

And, laſtly, after the following verbs, *to amuſe*, *to aſpire* or *aim at*, *to begin*, *to condemn*, *to continue* or *go on*, *to compel* or *force*, *to deſign* or *deſtine*, *to diſpoſe*, *to employ* or *ſpend*, *to encourage*, *to engage*, *to excite*, *to exhort*, *to help*, *to induce*, *to invite*, *to learn*, *to pleaſe*, *to ſerve*, *to take a pleaſure*, *a delight*, *in* or *to*, *to teach*, *to think*, &c.

EXERCISES ON THE PRECEDING RULES.

Come here, Paul, I have ſomething to communicate to you. — We have much to fear in our preſent ſituation, and a great many hazards to run. — I cannot go to the play to-night, for I have five or ſix viſits to pay. —— Is there any thing pleaſanter to ſee than the *rendre*, v.
flux and reflux of the ſea? — She is always the firſt to (find fault) with what I do. — Do not gather that *trouver à redire à*
apple, it is not yet good to eat. — Mr. N. told me you had a country houſe to let. — Mr. F. is a very agree- *louer*, v.
able man, always ready to ſerve his friends, but he has the misfortune to be inclined to gaming. — Your maſter does not love you, becauſe you are not diligent in learning

learning your leſſon. — The greateſt part of men ſpend their time either in doing nothing, or doing what they ought not to do. — What you ſay of her is very hard to be believed. — Tell him I have no com- *difficile*, adj.

plaints to make about his conduct. — Why do you oblige *de*

her to aſk my pardon ſince ſhe is not inclined to do it herſelf? — I believe ſhe takes a delight in tormentin me. — Life is ſo ſhort that we ſhould employ all our days in preparing ourſelves for the other world. — There is no more danger to fear. — Uſe yourſelf, ſaid a father *s'accoutumer*, v.

to his ſon, to practiſe virtue; that alone will help you to bear with patience all the viciſſitudes of fortune. *ſupporter*, v.

— Endeavour to pleaſe your maſters. — Never amuſe yourſelf in reading bad books. — You can never ſpend *paſſer*, v.

your time better than in reading and ſtudying the hiſtory of your own country. — Learn to ſpeak well; but, above all, to ſpeak truth. — That ſcience, which teaches *dire*, v.

us to ſee things as they are, is highly worthy of cultivation. — An honeſt man always takes pleaſure in obliging his friends. — Does your maſter teach you to tranſlate Engliſh into French? — Do you begin to tranſlate French well? — Why did you not oblige him to pay you what he owes you? — Why do ye not (get *s'ap-*

ready) to ſet out with us? — I love to diſcourſe with *prêter*, v. *s'entretenir*, v.

polite and ſenſible people.

N. B.

N. B. For the ſake of euphony, the following verbs, *to begin, to continue, to conſtrain, to engage, to exhort, to compel* or *force, to endeavour, to oblige*, may be ſucceeded by *de* or *à*, as moſt convenient.

The prepoſition *pour* is to be uſed before a verb in the infinitive mood, when it expreſſes the *cauſe*, the *deſign*, or the *end*, and then the Engliſh particle *to* may be expreſſed by *in order to, to the end*, or *for to*. This prepoſition is alſo uſed after the adverbs *enough, on purpoſe, too, too much*, or *leſs*; and before an infinitive, in the beginning of a period.

EXERCISES ON THESE RULES.

I will do every thing in my power to pleaſe him. — Mrs. B— has too much pride to confeſs ſhe (is in the *avoir*
wrong.) — To know geography well, one muſt, &c. *tort.*

— I aſſure you, that I came on purpoſe to ſee you. — She will do all that is in her power to oblige you, and to prove to you that ſhe is truly your friend. — The wicked live to die, but the righteous die to live. — She has vanity enough to believe all that you tell her. — I wrote to you ſometime ago to let you know that your
faire, v.
brothers were arrived. — He promiſed me that he would do every thing to deſerve the honour of your protection. — I ſent yeſterday my ſervant to your aunt's, to deſire her to ſend me back again the book I lent her a month ago, but ſhe was not at home. — We did all that
faire, v.
we

we could paſs the river, but we could not (bring it
venir à
about.) — To convince you that I am ready to do you
bout de, v.
any ſervice, (be ſo kind as) to command me. — Why
avoir la bonté de
did you not puniſh her for having done what you forbade
her to do? — A man ſhould live a century at leaſt
vivre, v. *ſiecle*, m.
to know the world, and many other centuries to know how
to make a proper uſe of that knowledge.

IDIOMATICAL EXPRESSIONS ON THE VERB *AVOIR*, TO HAVE.

Avoir mal à la tête, to have the head-ache, or a pain in one's head.

Avoir mal aux oreilles, to have ſore ears, or a pain in one's ears.

Avoir mal aux yeux, to have ſore eyes, or a pain in one's eyes.

Avoir mal au nez, to have a ſore noſe, or a pain in one's noſe.

Avoir mal à la bouche, to have a ſore mouth, or a pain in one's mouth.

Avoir mal aux dents, &c. to have the tooth-ache, &c.

We ſay, after the ſame manner,

Avoir froid aux mains, aux pieds, &c. ex.

J'ai froid à la tête, aux mains, et aux pieds, My head, my hands, and my feet, are cold.

Avoir beau, to be vain: ex.

Vous avez beau *parler*, *It is in vain for you* to talk.

Avoir beaucoup de peine, to have much ado.
Avoir de la peine à: ex.

J'ai de la peine à *vous croire*, *I can hardly* believe you.

Avoir beſoin de, to want, to have occaſion for.
Avoir la bonté de, *(daigner,)* to be ſo kind as.
Avoir connoiſſance, *avis*, *de*, to have notice of.
Avoir cours, to take, to be in vogue.
Avoir la mine de, to be like, to look like: ex.

Vous avez la mine d'*être intelligent*, *You look like* a man of underſtanding.

Avoir bonne mine, to look well: ex.

Vous avez très bonne mine *aujourd'hui*, *You look very well* to-day.

Avoir plus de peur que de mal, to be more afraid than hurt.
Avoir raiſon, to be in the right.
Avoir tort, to be in the wrong.
Avoir ſoin, to take care.
N'avoir que faire de, to have no occaſion or buſineſs of or for.

N'avoir garde de, or *Se garder bien de*, are expreſſed by { to be ſure not, or by no means.

EXERCISES ON THE PRECEDING RULES.

I could not call upon him this morning, becauſe I had A PAIN IN MY head. — My brother would have come with me, but he has A SORE leg, and is obliged to keep his bed. — I heard your mother had THE TOOTH-ACHE: is it true?—No, madam, but ſhe has A PAIN IN HER ſide, which prevents her from going out.—I have not yet finiſhed my exerciſe; for, MY HANDS WERE SO COLD that I could not write another

another word, beſides that, I HAD MUCH ADO to find my books, I did not know where to look for them.—IT WILL BE IN VAIN FOR YOU to write to me, I never will anſwer you.—I CAN HARDLY believe what you tell me.—It IS IN VAIN FOR me to ſpeak to her, ſhe ſtill goes her own way.—Miſs N. cried very much yeſterday, but I think ſhe WAS MORE AFRAID THAN HURT.—It HAS BEEN IN VAIN FOR him to torment your ſiſter, ſhe never would tell him what happened to her when ſhe was at Mr. P—'s.—IN VAIN I give myſelf trouble, I am not the richer for it.—Your ſiſter does not LOOK SO WELL to-day as ſhe did yeſterday.—AM I NOT IN THE RIGHT to go there no more?—I WILL TAKE CARE to prevent them from coming here.—YOU ARE IN THE WRONG not to aſk for his horſe, he would lend it to you.—Why ſhould I borrow his horſe, when I have one of my own?—I HAVE NO OCCASION FOR his.—BE SO KIND as to carry that letter to Mr. H——'s, but BE SURE NOT to tell him who ſent you.—I hope you will by NO MEANS go there again, after what has happened to you.—He was ſo altered, that ſhe HAD MUCH ADO to recollect him, but he now begins TO LOOK VERY WELL.

ON *ETRE*, TO BE.

Etre { *à ſon aiſe*, *en bonne poſſe*, *bien dans ſes affaires*, } to be in good circumſtances.

Etre bien auprès de quelqu'un, to be in great favour with one.
Etre mal avec quelqu'un, to be out with one.
Etre à charge à quelqu'un, to be chargeable, troublesome, or a burden, to one.
Etre but à but, to be equal.
Etre de moitié, to go halves.
Etre à la portée du fusil, du canon, to be within gun-shot.
Etre à la portée de la voix, to be within call.
Etre { *à la veille de*, / *sur le point de*, } to be upon the brink, or very near to.
Etre en état de, / *Avoir le moyen*, } to afford.

EXERCISES UPON THE PRECEDING IDIOMS.

Your brother IS IN GOOD CIRCUMSTANCES now.—Somebody told me he WAS IN GREAT FAVOUR WITH the king. —Yes, it is true, but HE IS OUT with my father, because HE IS TROUBLESOME to the family. —Well, Mr. R. and he ARE EQUALS.—I thought Mr. A. and Mrs. D. WENT HALVES in that affair, but I heard the contrary.—Suffer me to tell you you do very wrong to treat her as you do, you undoubtedly must have forgotten she IS IN the queen's FAVOUR.—— Well, if she BE IN the queen's FAVOUR, do you imagine I am not to tell her what I think of her conduct? — The two fleets WERE WITHIN GUN-SHOT, and very NEAR beginning the engagement, when we left them. —We WILL BE WITHIN CALL. —Why do you not take a coach now and then? said she to me. —I would willingly take one sometimes, replied I to her, but I cannot AFFORD it.

ON *FAIRE*, TO MAKE, OR DO.

Faire cas de, to value, to eſteem.
Faire un tour de promenade, to take a walk.
Faire le malade, to ſham ſickneſs.
Faire l'école buiſſonniere, to play truant.
Faire beaucoup de chemin, to go a great way.
Faire le bel eſprit, to ſet up for a wit.
Faire fond ſur quelqu'un, to rely upon one.
Faire ſavoir, (*envoyer dire*,) to let one know, to inform, to ſend word.
Faire voile, or *Mettre à la voile*, } to ſet ſail.
Faire faire, to beſpeak, to get made, to oblige one to do.
Faire de ſon pis, to do one's worſt.
ne Faire que de, to be juſt, or *venir de*, to have but juſt: ex.

Il ne fait que d'arriver, He is but juſt arrived.

ne Faire que, to do nothing but.
ſe Faire des amis, *des ennemis*, to get friends, enemies.
ſe Faire des affaires to bring one's ſelf into trouble.
s'en Faire accroire, to be conceited, to have a good opinion of one's ſelf.
c'en eſt Fait de moi, I am undone.
c'en étoit Fait de lui, he was undone.
c'en ſera Fait d'elle, ſhe will be undone.
c'en ſeroit Fait de nous, we ſhould be undone.

The Engliſh verb, *to cauſe*, preceding the verb *to be*, immediately followed by a participle paſſive, is rendered, in French, by the verb *faire*, and then the verb *to be* is not expreſſed, but the participle paſſive is turned into the infinitive mood: ex.

Il lui fit couper *la tête*, He *cauſed* his head *to be cut off*.

EXERCISES ON THE PRECEDING IDIOMS.

Do not loſe that ring, for I VALUE it much; it is a particular friend of yours who gave it me.—I would go and TAKE A WALK, if I were well.—Do you not SHAM SICKNESS now and then?——Did not your brother PLAY TRUANT laſt week?—That man GOES A GREAT WAY for a trifle.——Mr. P. SETS UP FOR A WIT wherever he goes.—— You may RELY UPON what I tell you. — LET ME KNOW whether he will pay you or not.—We SHALL SET SAIL about the fifteenth of the next month.—— Why did not you BESPEAK three or four pair of ſhoes more? —SEND WORD TO your brother, or LET him KNOW, that there is a letter for him here. —I will give him an exerciſe, and OBLIGE HIM TO DO it in my preſence.—She told me, if ſhe WERE OBLIGED TO DO it, ſhe WOULD DO HER WORST.——We were BUT JUST come in when it began to rain. — You DO NOTHING BUT play from morning till night. —That young lady WILL GET friends every where.——If you do not take care you WILL BRING YOURSELF INTO TROUBLE.—Permit me to tell you that they ARE TOO MUCH CONCEITED.—Your brother IS UNDONE if his maſter come to know of it.—In 1606, King James cauſed the oath of allegiance to be drawn up; and, in 1621, ſummoned a parliament, in which were formed the two parties, called Whigs and Tories.

ON DIFFERENT VERBS.

Aimer mieux, to have rather, to chooſe rather.
Se donner bien des airs, to take a great deal upon one's ſelf.
Il ne faut pas s'étonner, it is no wonder.
Il me tarde de, I long to.
Penſer, to be like. (Followed by a verb in the infinitive mood.)
S'en prendre à, to lay the fault or blame upon one, to come upon one for.
S'y bien prendre, to go the right way to work.
S'y prendre mal, to go the wrong way to work.
S'y prendre tout autrement, to go quite a different, or another, way to work.
Prendre en mauvaiſe part, to take amiſs.
Venir à bout de, to bring about.

EXERCISES ON THE PRECEDING IDIOMS.

I RATHER CHOOSE to ſet out now than later.—She told me ſhe HAD RATHER do any thing than ſpeak to Mr. L.——They HAD RATHER have had you ſtay in Italy two or three years longer.—Do not you think Mrs. H. TAKES A GREAT DEAL UPON HERSELF?—IT IS NO WONDER that I do not ſpeak French as well as you; you have been ſeveral years in France and I never was there.—I hope your brother will ſucceed in his undertaking; for, he GOES THE RIGHT WAY TO WORK.—Your couſin, on the contrary, will always be poor; for he GOES THE WRONG WAY TO WORK in every thing he undertakes. — She LONGS TO ſee your father, and tell him how well you have behaved all the time of his abſence.—I HAD LIKE to have been killed in coming here.—If he loſe he WILL LAY THE BLAME

BLAME UPON YOU.—Why do you LAY THE BLAME UPON her? ſhe was not even in the room when that happened. — Should not your ſiſter ſucceed, whom WOULD SHE LAY THE FAULT UPON?—You ſay you LONG to ſpeak French; and I too, I aſſure you. — I LONG to tell you ſomething, nevertheleſs I do not know how to communicate it to you for fear of diſobliging you.—When you have a mind to tell me ſomething diſagreeable you ſhould GO QUITE A DIFFERENT WAY TO WORK. — I beg of you not TO TAKE AMISS what I tell you.—Do not begin a thing unleſs you are ſure TO BRING IT ABOUT.

ON DIFFERENT VERBS.

Se paſſer de, to do without, or to be eaſy without.
Savoir bon gré, to take kindly if.
Trouver mauvais que, to take ill of.*
Tenir maiſon, to be a houſekeeper.
Tenir boutique, to be a ſhopkeeper.
Ne tenir qu'à, } to be in one's power, } to lie in one's power: ex.

Il ne tient qu'à moi, à vous, à lui, à elle, &c. It is in my, your, his, her, power, &c.
Il ne tient pas à moi, à vous, &c. que, It is not my, your, fault, &c. if.†

S'en tenir à, to ſtand to.
Vouloir du bien à, to wiſh one well.
En vouloir à, to have a ſpite againſt.
Je ſouhaiterois pouvoir, I wiſh I could.
Il y va, il y alloit, de votre vie, your life is, was, at ſtake.

* With the following verb in the ſubjunctive.
† With the following verb in the ſubjunctive, and *ne* before it.

Il y va, il y alloit, de mon honneur, my honour is, was, concerned in it.

Je ne laiſſe pas de, I nevertheleſs, or, for all that.

EXERCISES ON THE PRECEDING IDIOMS.

When I have wine, I drink ſome; but, when I have none, I AM EASY WITHOUT.—If you will BE SO KIND AS TO write to my father, to let him to know my ſituation, I SHALL TAKE IT KINDLY OF YOU.—I WISH I COULD do you that ſervice, I would do it with all my heart.—I hope you WILL NOT TAKE IT ILL IF I write to your uncle at the ſame time.—I SHALL STAND TO what you ſay.—He HAS BEEN A HOUSE-KEEPER theſe five-and-twenty years.—How little ſoever you ſend him to priſon, he will TAKE IT KINDLY OF you.—IT IS IN HER POWER to live in the country and be very happy there.—IT WILL SOON LIE IN YOUR POWER to make us happy.—I aſſure you it SHALL NOT BE MY FAULT IF you do not ſucceed, for I WISH YOU WELL. — Since it LIES IN YOUR POWER to recommend Mr. P. to your friend, why do you not do it? — When you ſee him you may aſſure him that, ſince it IS IN MY POWER to do it, I will not forget him. — You HAVE A SPITE AGAINST my brother, becauſe IT WAS IN HIS POWER two or three times to oblige you and he never would. — I WISH I COULD perſuade you how ſorry he was for it; but his honour WAS CONCERNED in not doing it: and, though you be very angry with him, he would, NEVERTHELESS, (or, FOR ALL THAT,) do you ſervice if it were

IN

IN HIS POWER.—Every body admires her humanity; for, though he has behaved in ſo ungrateful a manner towards her, ſhe would, NEVERTHELESS, have done him ſervice if he had lived.

GENERAL AND PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON DIFFERENT SUBJECTS.

Of the UNDERSTANDING of LANGUAGES.

Intelligence, f.

The underſtanding of languages ſerves (for an) introduction to all the ſciences. By it we come, with very little trouble, at the knowledge of a great many fine things, which have coſt thoſe who invented them a great deal of pains. By it all times and countries lie open to us. By it we become, in ſome means, contemporary to all ages and inhabitants of all kingdoms. It (enables) us to converſe with the moſt learned men of all antiquity, who ſeem to have lived and laboured for us. We find in them many maſters, whom (we are allowed) to conſult at leiſure; many friends, who are always at hand, and whoſe uſeful and agreeable converſation improves the mind. It informs us of a thouſand curious ſubjects, and teaches us equally

de

parvenir, v.

ſiecle, m.

être, v.

mettre en état

il nous eſt permis

enrichir, v.

qually how (to make an advantage) of the virtues and
à *profiter*, v
vices of mankind. Without the assistance of languages, all these oracles are dumb to us, and all these
pour, p.
treasures (locked up;) and, for want of having the
fermer, v.
key which alone can open us the door (to them,) we
en, p.
remain poor in the midst of so many riches, and ignorant in the midst of all the sciences.

OF STUDY.

We (come into the world) surrounded with a cloud
naître, v. *
of ignorance, which is increased by the false prejudices of a bad education. By study, the former is dispersed and the latter corrected. It gives proportion and ex-
justesse, f.
actness to our thoughts and reasonings; instructs how to range in due order whatever we have to speak or
dire, v.
write, and presents us with the brightest sages of anti-
*
quity as patterns for our conduct, whom, in this sense,
modele, m.
we may well call, with Seneca, the masters and teachers
précepteur, m.
of mankind. But the usefulness of study is not confined to what we call science, it renders us also more fit for

* See the observation on the preposition *with*.

business

buſineſs and employment; beſides, though this
de plus, adv. *quand*, c.
ſtudy were of no other uſe than (the acquiring) a ha-
†
bit of labour, (the ſoftening) the pains of it, (the pro-
† †
curing) a ſteadineſs of mind, and (conquering) our a-
fermeté, f. †
verſions to application and a ſedentary life, or whatever
elſe ſeems (to lay a reſtraint upon) us, it would ſtill be
aſſujettir, v.
of very great advantage. In reality, it draws us off
retirer, v.
from idleneſs, play, and debauchery.] It uſefully fills
up the vacant hours of the day, and renders very agree-
able that leiſure, which, without the aſſiſtance of lite-
rature, is a kind of death, and, in a manner, the grave
of a man whilſt he is alive. It enables us to paſs a
right judgement upon other men's labours, to enter in-
to ſociety with men of underſtanding, to keep the
fréquenter, v.
beſt company, (to have a ſhare in) the diſcourſes of the
prendre part à
moſt learned, to furniſh out matter for converſation,
(without which) we muſt be ſilent, to render it more
agreeable and more uſeful, by intermixing facts with
reflections, and ſetting the one by the other.
relever, v.

† Theſe participles active are to be rendered, in French, by the infinitive.

INDOLENCE CHARACTERISED.

Indolence deprives men of all that activity which ſhould call forth their virtues and make them illuſtrious. An indolent man is ſcarcely a man; he is half a woman. He wills and unwills in a breath. He may have good intentions to diſcharge a duty, while that duty is at a diſtance; let it but approach, let him view the time of action near, his hands immediately (drop down) *tomber*, v.

in languor. What (can be done) with ſuch a man? *peut on faire* *

He is abſolutely good for nothing. Buſineſs tires him, reading fatigues him, the ſervice of his country interferes too much with his pleaſures, and even attendance at court, though for the time of advancement, is too great a conſtraint upon him. His life ſhould be paſſed on a bed of down. If he be employed, mo- *duvet*, m *s'employer*, v.

ments (are as) hours to him; if he be amuſed, hours *ſembler*, v. *s'amuſer*, v.

are as moments. In general, his whole time elades him; he lets it glide unheeded, like water under *inſenſiblement*, adv.

a bridge. Aſk him what he has done with his morning, * *matinée*, f.

he knows nothing about it; for, he has lived without one reflection upon his exiſtence. He has ſlept as long as it was poſſible for him to ſleep, dreſſed ſlowly, amuſed himſelf in chat with the firſt perſon that called upon

* See the obſervation on the prepoſition *with*.

him, and taken ſeveral turns in his room till dinner.
faire, v.

Dinner is ſerved up, and the evening will be ſpent as unprofitably as the morning, and his whole life as this day. (Once more) ſuch a man is good for nothing.
Encore une fois, adv.

It is only pride that can ſupport him in a life ſo worthleſs, and ſo much beneath the character of a man.

ANECDOTE OF THE CARDINAL VIVIERS.

John de Brogni, Cardinal of Viviers, who preſided at the council of Conſtance as dean of the cardinals, had been a hog-driver in his infancy. Some monks, paſſing by the place where he was buſied in that mean employment, and taking notice of his wit and vivacity, offered to carry him to Rome, and bring him up to ſtudy. The boy accepted of their offer, and went ſtraight to a ſhoe-maker to buy a pair of ſhoes for his journey; the ſhoe-maker truſted him with part of the price, and told him, ſmiling, he ſhould pay him the reſt when he was made a cardinal. He became a cardinal in reality, and did not forget his former low condition, but took care to perpetuate the memory of it. In a chapel he built at Geneva, over againſt the gate of St. Peter's church, he cauſed this adventure to be carved in a ſtone, where he is repreſented young and without ſhoes, keeping hogs under a tree, and all around the wall are the figures of ſhoes, to expreſs the favour he had

had received from the ſhoe-maker. This monument is ſtill ſubſiſting at Geneva.

Of ENGLAND.

England is truly the queen of iſles, the empire and citadel of Neptune: it is, at the ſame time, the Peru of Europe, the kingdom of Bacchus, the ſchool of Epicurus, the academy of Venus, the country of Mars, the reſidence of Minerva, the bulwark of Holland, the ſcourge of France, the purgatory of the friends of ſubjection, and, in one word, the paradiſe of liberty. The ladies there are very handſome; courage is as if it were natural to the men, but it is carried to an exceſs that approaches near to brutality. Mental talents there are as great as in any other country, or perhaps greater: it is there that Fortune may be juſtly ſaid to pour out her favours with a liberal hand. The language of England is a mixture of all thoſe that are ſpoken in Europe, but it has a greater degree of energy and is more copious than any other. In ſhort, this nation ſeems to want nothing to complete its happineſs but the ſecret of knowing how to enjoy it. The natural inquietude of the people, and their exceſſive jealouſy with reſpect to their privileges and freedom, have often plunged them into all the horrors of civil wars, which have brought them (to the very verge) of deſtruction.

à deux doigts

From the obſervations I have been enabled to make, I

can with ſafety ſay, that no place is more capable of affording pleaſure to a young man, who underſtands the language, and has a fortune ſufficient to ſupport the expences of a gentleman

FRATERNAL AFFECTION.

The king of Cucho had three ſons, and, like many other parents, having moſt affection for the youngeſt, ſome days before his death declared him his ſucceſſor to the excluſion of his brethren. This proceeding was the more extraordinary as it was contrary to the laws of the kingdom. The people, therefore, thought that, after the death of the king, they might, without any crime, raiſe the eldeſt ſon to the throne. This deſign was univerſally approved of; but the new king, calling to mind his father's laſt words, rejected the offer, and, taking the crown, placed it on the head of his youngeſt brother, publicly declaring that he renounced it, and thought himſelf unworthy of it, as he was excluded by his father's will, and his father could not now retract what he had done. His brother, being affected with ſuch a generous action, inſtantly intreated him not to oppoſe the inclination of the people, who deſired him for their ruler. He urged that he alone was the lawful ſucceſſor to the crown which he refuſed, and that their father could not infringe the laws of the kingdom; that he had been betrayed by an extravagant fondneſs; and that, in a word, the people had the

power

power of redreſſing any breach in the eſtabliſhed law. Nothing, however, was capable of perſuading his brother to accept of the crown. There was a glorious conteſt between the two princes; and, as they perceived that the diſpute would be endleſs, they retired from court. Thus, each having both conquered and been vanquiſhed, they went to end their days together in peaceful ſolitude, and left the kingdom to their other brother.

INGRATITUDE PUNISHED:

AN EASTERN TALE.

He that's ungrateful has no fault but one,
All other crimes may paſs for virtues in him.

YOUNG.

A derviſe, venerable by his age, fell ill in the houſe of a woman, who had been long a widow, and lived in extreme poverty in the ſuburbs of Balſora. He was ſo touched with the care and zeal with which ſhe had aſſiſted him, that, at his departure, he ſaid to her, "I have remarked that you have wherewith to ſubſiſt alone, but that you have not ſubſtance enough to ſhare it with your only ſon, the young Abdallah. If you will truſt him to my care, I will endeavour to acknowledge, in his perſon, the obligations I have to you for the care you have taken of me." The good woman received this propoſal with joy, and the derviſe departed with the young man, advertiſing her, that they muſt perform a journey which would laſt near two years. As they travelled, he kept him in affluence, gave him excellent inſtructions, cured him of a dangerous diſeaſe with

which he was attacked; in fine, he took the ſame care of him as if he had been his own ſon. Abdallah a hundred times teſtified his gratitude to him for all his bounties; but the old man always anſwered, "My ſon, it is by actions that gratitude is proved; we ſhall ſee, in a proper time and place, whether you are ſo grateful as you pretend."

One day, as they continued their travels, they found themſelves in a ſolitary place, and the derviſe ſaid to Abdallah, "My ſon, we are now at the end of our journey; I ſhall employ my prayers to obtain from heaven, that the earth may open and make an entrance wide enough to permit you to deſcend into a place, where you will find one of the greateſt treaſures that the earth incloſes in her bowels. Have you courage to deſcend into this ſubterraneous vault?" continued he. Abdallah ſwore to him he might depend upon his obedience and zeal. Then the derviſe lighted a ſmall fire, into which he caſt a perfume; he read and prayed for ſome moments; after which the earth opened, and the derviſe ſaid to him, "You may now enter, my dear Abdallah: remember that it is in your power to do me a great ſervice, and that this is, perhaps, the only opportunity you can ever have of teſtifying to me that you are not ungrateful. Do not let yourſelf be dazzled by all the riches you will find there; think only of ſeizing upon an iron candleſtick with twelve branches, which you will find cloſe to a door: that is abſolutely neceſſary for me." Abdallah promiſed every thing, and deſcended boldly into the vault; but, forgetting what had been expreſsly recommended to him, whilſt he was filling his veſt and his boſom with gold and jewels, which this ſubterraneous vault incloſed in prodigious heaps, the opening by which he entered cloſed of itſelf. He had however preſence of mind enough to ſeize upon the iron candleſtick, which the derviſe had ſo ſtrongly recommended to him; and, though the ſituation he was in was very terrible, he did not abandon himſelf to deſpair; and, thinking only in what manner he ſhould get out of a place which might become his grave,

grave, he apprehended that the vault had closed only because he had not followed the order of the dervise; he recalled to his memory the care and goodness he had loaded him with, reproached himself with his ingratitude, and finished his meditation by humbling himself before heaven. At length, after much pains and inquietude, he was fortunate enough to find a narrow passage which led him out of this obscure cave; though it was not till he had followed it a considerable way that he perceived a small opening covered with briers and thorns, through which he returned to the light of the sun. He looked on all sides, to see whether he could perceive the dervise, but in vain: he designed to deliver him the iron candlestick he so much wished for, and formed a design of quitting him, being rich enough, with what he had taken out of the cavern, to live in affluence without his assistance.

Not perceiving the dervise, nor remembering any of the places through which he had passed, he went on as fortune had directed him, and was extremely astonished to find himself opposite his mother's house, from which he imagined he was at a great distance. She immediately inquired after the holy dervise. Abdallah told her frankly what had happened to him, and the danger he had run to satisfy his unreasonable desires; he afterwards shewed her the riches with which he was loaded. His mother concluded, upon the sight of them, that the dervise only designed to make a trial of his courage and obedience, and that they ought to make use of the happiness which fortune had presented to them; adding, that, doubtless, such was the intention of the holy dervise. Whilst they contemplated upon these treasures with avidity, whilst they were dazzled with the lustre of them, and formed a thousand projects in consequence of them, they all vanished away before their eyes. It was then that Abdallah sincerely reproached himself for his ingratitude and disobedience; and, perceiving that the iron candlestick had resisted the enchantment, or rather the just punishment which those deserve who do not execute what they promise,

he

he ſaid, proſtrating himſelf,— "What has happened to me is juſt; I have loſt what I had no deſign to reſtore, and the candleſtick, which I intended to deliver to the derviſe, remains with me: it is a proof, that it rightly belongs to him, and that the reſt was unjuſtly acquired." As he finiſhed theſe words, he placed the candleſtick in the midſt of their little houſe.

When the night was come, without reflecting upon it, he placed a light in the candleſtick. Immediately they ſaw a derviſe appear, who turned about for an hour, and diſappeared, after having thrown them an aſper. This candleſtick had twelve branches. Abdallah, who was meditating all the day upon what he had ſeen the night before, was willing to know what would happen, the next night, if he put a light in each of them; he did ſo, and twelve derviſes appeared that inſtant; they turned round alſo for an hour, and each of them threw an aſper as they diſappeared. He repeated every day the ſame ceremony, which had always the ſame ſucceſs, but he never could make it ſucceed more than once in twenty-four hours. This trifling ſum was enough to make his mother and himſelf ſubſiſt tolerably: there was a time when they would have deſired no more to be happy; but it was not conſiderable enough to change their fortune: it is always dangerous for the imagination to be fixed upon the idea of riches. The ſight of what he believed he ſhould poſſeſs; the projects he had formed for the employment of it; all theſe things had left ſuch profound traces in the mind of Abdallah, that nothing could efface them. Therefore, ſeeing the ſmall advantage he drew from the candleſtick, he reſolved to carry it back to the derviſe, in hopes that he might obtain from him the treaſure he had ſeen, or, at leaſt, find again the riches which had vaniſhed from their ſight, by reſtoring to him a thing for which he teſtified ſo earneſt a deſire. He was ſo fortunate as to remember his name, and that of the city where he inhabited. He departed therefore immediately for Magrebi, carrying with him his candleſtick, which he lighted every night, and, by that means,

furniſhed

furniſhed himſelf with what was neceſſary on the road, without being obliged to implore the aſſiſtance and compaſſion of the faithful. When he arrived at Magrebi, his firſt care was to inquire in what houſe, or in what convent, Abounadar lodged: he was ſo well known that every body told him his habitation. He repaired thither directly, and found fifty porters, who kept the gate of his houſe, having each a ſtaff, with a head of gold, in their hands: the court of this palace was filled with ſlaves and domeſtics: in fine, the reſidence of a prince could not expoſe to view greater magnificence. Abdallah, ſtruck with aſtoniſhment and admiration, feared to proceed. Certainly, thought he, I either explained myſelf wrong, or thoſe to whom I addreſſed myſelf, deſigned to make a jeſt of me becauſe I was a ſtranger: this is not the habitation of a derviſe; it is that of a king. He was in this embarraſſment, when a man approached him, and ſaid to him, "Abdallah, you are welcome; my maſter, Abounadar, has long expected you." He then conducted him to an agreeable and magnificent pavilion, where the derviſe was ſeated. Abdallah, ſtruck with the riches he beheld on all ſides, would have proſtrated himſelf at his feet, but Abounadar prevented him, and interrupted him, when he would have made a merit of the candleſtick, which he preſented to him. "You are but an ungrateful wretch, ſaid he to him, do you imagine you can impoſe upon me? I am not ignorant of any one of your thoughts: and, if you had known the value of this candleſtick, you would never have brought it to me; I will make you ſenſible of its uſe." Immediately he placed a light in each of its branches; and, when the twelve derviſes had turned round for ſome time, Abounadar gave each of them a blow with a cane, and, in a moment, they were converted into twelve heaps of ſequins, diamonds, and other precious ſtones, "This, ſaid he, is the proper uſe to be made of this marvellous candleſtick. As to me, I never deſired it, but to place it in my cabinet, as a taliſman compoſed by a ſage whom I revere, and am pleaſed to expoſe it ſometimes to thoſe who come

to visit me: and, to prove to you, added he, that curiosity was the only occasion of my search for it, here are the keys of my magazines, open them, and you shall judge of my riches; you shall tell me whether the most insatiable miser would not be satisfied with them." Abdallah obeyed him, and examined twelve magazines of great extent, so full of all manner of riches, that he could not distinguish which merited his admiration most; they all deserved it, and produced new desires. The regret of having restored the candlestick, and that of not having found out the use of it, pierced the heart of Abdallah. Abounadar seemed not to perceive it: on the contrary, he loaded him with caresses, kept him some days in his house, and commanded him to be treated as himself. When he was at the eve of the day, which he had fixed for his departure, he said to him, "Abdallah, my son, I believe, by what has happened to you, you are corrected of the frightful vice of ingratitude; however, I owe you a mark of my affection, for having undertaken so long a journey, with a view of bringing me the thing I had desired: you may depart, I shall detain you no longer. You shall find, to-morrow, at the gate of my palace, one of my horses to carry you; I make you a present of it, as well as of a slave who shall conduct you to your house; and two camels loaded with gold and jewels, which you shall choose yourself out of my treasures." Abdallah said to him all that a heart sensible of avarice could express when its passion was satisfied, and went to lie down till the morning arrived, which was fixed for his departure.

During the night he was still agitated, without being able to think of any thing but the candlestick, and what it had produced. "I had it, said he, so long in my power; Abounadar, without me, had never been possessor of it: what risks did I not run in the subterraneous vault? Why does he now possess this treasure of treasures? Because I had the probity, or, rather, the folly, to bring it back to him; he profits by my labour, and the danger I have incurred by so long a journey.

journey. And what does he give me in return? Two camels loaded with gold and jewels: in one moment the candleſtick will furniſh him with ten times as much. It is Abounadar who is ungrateful: what wrong ſhall I do him in taking this candleſtick? None certainly; for he is rich: and what do I poſſeſs?" Theſe ideas determined him, at length, to make all poſſible attempts to ſeize upon the candleſtick. The thing was not difficult, Abounadar having truſted him with the keys of his magazines. He knew where the candleſtick was placed; he ſeized upon it, hid it in the bottom of one of the ſacks, which he filled with pieces of gold and other riches which he was allowed to take, and loaded it, as well as the reſt, upon his camels. He had no other eagerneſs now than for his departure; and, after having haſtily bade adieu to the generous Abounadar, he delivered him his keys, and departed with his horſe, his ſlave, and two camels.

When he was ſome days journey from Balſora, he ſold his ſlave, reſolving not to have a witneſs of his former poverty, nor of the ſource of his preſent riches. He bought another, and arrived, without any obſtacle, at his mother's, whom he would ſcarce look upon, ſo much was he taken up with his treaſure. His firſt care was to place the loads of his camels and the candleſtick in the moſt private room of the houſe; and, in his impatience to feed his eyes with his great opulence, he placed lights immediately in the candleſtick: the twelve derviſes appearing, he gave each of them a blow with a cane with all his ſtrength, leſt he ſhould be failing in the laws of the taliſman: but he had not remarked that Abounadar, when he ſtruck them, had the cane in his left hand. Abdallah, by a natural motion, made uſe of his right; and the derviſes, inſtead of becoming heaps of riches, immediately drew from beneath their robes each a formidable club, with which they ſtruck him ſo hard and ſo long that they left him almoſt dead, and diſappeared, carrying with them all his treaſure, the camels, the horſe, the ſlave, and the candleſtick.

Thus

Thus was Abdallah puniſhed, by poverty and almoſt by death, for his unreaſonable ambition, which perhaps might have been pardonable, if it had not been accompanied by an ingratitude as wicked as it was audacious, ſince he had not ſo much as the reſource of being able to conceal his prefidies from the too-piercing eyes of his benefactor.

FINIS.